

utter nonSense

Part 2

(Accessing Reality/The Force by the growth of Will/Consciousness)

by

Vly Skywalker

| | |
|---|-----|
| CHAPTER 14 Fun and Games | 5 |
| Tool for Transition..... | 5 |
| Gaming..... | 8 |
| The ONE LAW..... | 11 |
| A Hug Is Worth..... | 14 |
| Sweet Mary..... | 15 |
| The Look of love..... | 17 |
| Sister, Mother..... | 24 |
| The Pecker Doesn't Work Syndrome..... | 25 |
| Rick & Mitzy..... | 28 |
| Keith..... | 29 |
| Shifting into Granny Mode..... | 30 |
| What an Asshole..... | 31 |
| Prisoner of Your Dream Keep..... | 33 |
| With Each..... | 34 |
| Protrusions..... | 37 |
| Sam..... | 39 |
| Imaginings..... | 42 |
| Muffy..... | 46 |
| Confusion..... | 47 |
| The Queen of Denial..... | 48 |
| I Don't Want..... | 50 |
| No, I don't Want to Have Sex..... | 53 |
| She loves to Be a Martyr..... | 61 |
| Alcohol Test..... | 65 |
| Manic Maniac..... | 67 |
| Insensate..... | 68 |
| Freudian love..... | 69 |
| Functionality..... | 71 |
| CHAPTER 15 To be unNatural | 74 |
| CHAPTER 16 Jousting | 83 |
| Womb Joust..... | 89 |
| Silent..... | 89 |
| Tilting..... | 92 |
| The Fourth Joust..... | 100 |
| The Fifth Joust..... | 107 |
| The Coven Joust..... | 109 |
| CHAPTER 17 PARADOX | 113 |
| CHAPTER 18 Speech | 124 |
| Counter or Identical..... | 129 |
| CHAPTER 19 Sin or Self Abuse | 131 |
| CHAPTER 20 Discoveries | 135 |
| CHAPTER 21 Whenever | 137 |
| love Quotas..... | 139 |
| Sound Familiar?..... | 141 |

CHAPTER 22 Shifting..... 142
Soapbox..... 146
Bibliographies..... 178

Fun and Games or Lessons, Shifting and Syndromes

Note: Modern science calls anything that doesn't follow a well-defined path towards healing (seemingly) to be a syndrome. In other words if a doctor can't cure you he calls it a syndrome or condition, which is to say that he or she has many patients that have been documented with this common problem, but science doesn't have a cure. When there are a lot of cases of this ailment they give it a name and that makes it just fine, for the unknown is very scary. I have just been informed that doctors in the United States have defined (invented) many new syndromes so that insurance companies will pay for the treatment of these. The fact of the matter is that unReality smacks them in the face. Who do you think cures anyone? Those people themselves. Granted a doctor may enlist the aid of a Devas (God (collective Consciousness) of a specific plant), but ultimately the cure is the responsibility of the individual. And the lack of cure is a lesson. As Will can grow in a person so too does Consciousness (one in the same), which is manifest when Understanding, Patience and Discipline are in perfect balance; one or all of which the patient had to acquire in order to cure herself or himself. Syndromes are excuses doctors make for their patients' lack of Will. Back problems due to being over weight or a severe skin disorder due to making fun of a specific person in a previous lifetime are but examples. Cures are possible, for with a growth in Will all is possible, for Reality is magical, which is to say that it is mechanical, a result of Cause and Effect, which Access you must Wilfully acquire.

Tool for Transition

I recall the day you told me how fortunate it was that I had Carpal Tunnel Syndrome. I was enraged. Of course, being "no" programmed, I was incessantly on the make for "love," so I readily coloured anything anyone said as a *Stimulus* for the "no" programme. Undoubtedly my RMAA saw you as a surrogate bairn attendant and I just coloured your matter-a-fact-ness and unemotionalism as apathy for my concerns, typical of my recalled bairn attendants. I agree "love" is a familiar monster on the loose on my planet. Of course, now that my Grail is Holy I don't lapse into Asleepness. I'm a sucker. Students try to get me to play the role of their mother but all I do is suck. These beasts always are amazed at what they call, my composure. They constantly comment, particularly the females, on my 'peace' as they call it.

I recall Joanie who called you the Vamp because you started saying how a person must learn to Accept the life-Force contained in the emotings of the beasts. Joanie liked to perform fallatio on her lovers, so you used that as a lesson about Acceptance. You wanted Joanie to not only physically suck the seminal fluid from her lover's penis, but to also Accept the emotings that the guy exuded during the *Reward* part of his sexual "love" programme. Joanie still calls you the Vamp. Every time I hear her reference to you I think of your outrageous lesson. There was Tom with his pants down and there was Joanie on her knees performing fallatio on him as you were lecturing our group on the subject of Acceptance. Tom told me he had a heck of a time keeping it up, but all of a sudden he found himself only in one frame of mind, a sexual frame of mind. When he came, you were right behind her and drew the force right through her and dropped it in her being. For years I have drawn Force through my students, and the process taught them Access, but only last class was I able to drop the line of force precisely allowing a pupil to take up Absorption. You always said to merely shift attention. Everything is "merely" for you. But merely is the right attitude when shifting. As usual you are Quite as right as rein. Supremely!

I use the story of my bout with Carpal Tunnel Syndrome as a lesson, in the nature of the beast, to my students, but it is hard to match this lesson with any of yours. Here it is for the text book.

I knew that I was re-running a "love" programme by the fact that my right arm would hurt, which was due to the tensing of my entire body during the Fear and Loathing state that accompanies and is part of the *Stimulus* portion of a conditioned response. Most people remain in apprehension as their "selves" peruse Reality

for *Stimulating* symbols. When I was in the womb my mother would enter a state of apprehension before she did any task. This is how she accomplished everything she did, which is true of all Homo robotics, for everything they do, they do for “love.” She would imagine that the task at hand was a negative, she would then collect her energies by tensing her body, then she would go do the task. Even during doing, she would continue to tense her body in a state of anticipation of receiving “love,” for she would still be in her mother’s company in her mind, still just prior to the release of apprehension that takes place in *Reward*. Not until the task was actually accomplished would my mother enter *Reward* and release her tension. Once out of the womb I again had this played out for me. During a task of changing nappies or feeding me or anything, whereby I was in her company, she would be doing the task in a state of apprehension. Only after the specific task was completed did she release. And generally milliseconds later she would have coloured yet another thing “no” and once again entered the state of Fear and Loathing, and once again was enTRANCED; trying very hard to get back to “Womb” by perusing for another “no” *Stimulus*. Learning to sustain her time (un-Time) in TRANCE, she remained tense and stressed. I became expert in remaining in the tensing of stress, anticipating “love.”

This was early in my study of the nature of the beasts, within me. A few teachers said that I was fortunate to have this problem, and in retrospect I was. During group living everyone gets to know everyone intimately. RMAAic activities become well known and well defined. It is the job of each student to be watchful and concerned with every other student so that in the event that a student notices that some other student is enTRANCED, that they can be reminded and re-awakened. Students readily notice the frown on the face or the bad posture of an “acting” RMAA. I say acting RMAA because that is all ones RMAA or “selves” truly are, actors, who are truly acting in a certain way to please a touch-lover of their childhood. Actors performing in a way that it learned in youth would glean the most attention for the longest period of time from its bairn attendant of that past moment.

I didn’t need someone to tell me when I was in the ozone. For example while driving my car to visit someone I would sense my excitement, and shift into imPatience, my arm would hurt, my mind would race with all sorts of imaginings and ideas as my “self” would try to reconstruct its interactions with its creator: one of my parents. During these times I was indeed fortunate, for the moment my right forearm began to pain me I’d know that I was in a TRANCE. The tensing of my body (in desire for “Womb”) before I went to do a task had been happening all my life, practically. The task could be brushing my teeth or thinking about what I would do in ten minutes from now (for or with some imagined or make believe bairn attendant). I often practised stretching and yawning (a shortened form of a “love” programme. It involves tensing and then exuding life-Force). During these re-runnings of “love,” my arms would ache, so I knew that what you had told us about yawning and stretching was completely accurate. To combat this I would enter (my) Champion: controlling breathing, posture, elevate my eyes on All and while in the car I would scan (scanning is swinging head 180 degrees from right to left- and left to right). Almost immediately my pain would stop and my outlook would change. I would stop my internal dialogue and ‘suck.’ Actually at this point in my development I would become peaceful and somewhat Real. I definitely felt energised. The more time I spent in Reality, the better my arms became. I was indeed fortunate to have such an alarm system to inform me that I was enTRANCED in “Womb.”

I think it’s important to give the student methods for gaming: doing randomly acts of Will. Scanning is one that you suggested to me in 1968. Scanning is merely an Act of Will that involves moving the entire head from 90° right of straight ahead to 90° left of straight ahead in a slow sweeping motion while walking or driving an automobile. It is not unlike hopping on one foot while rubbing your tummy, reciting the Gettysburg Address and tapping your head first in the front of the head and then in the back of it, alternately.

In the case of so many students’ “selves,” they learned imPatience and made it a part of their RMAAic armour(y). The more physically demanding an Act of Will is the better it tires-out the RMAA. Later scanning in enter Champion became sufficient for me to (shut down) demand fealty of my childish “selves.” Eventually I merely entered Champion and it stopped the pain. According to my Student Chronicle, I told you of G. I. Gurdjieff, who called this Remembering Thy Self. The Chronicle also said that I would notice a rush of internal dialogue and impatience before the pain, which was noted in retrospect of having the pain. Eventually I did not need scanning or any Will-ful acts gamed to stop the pain. I would enter Champion, quieting down, the pain

would disappear. If I fell Asleep again, indication of which was that my arm would hurt, all I need do is enter Champion and the pain would cease. This well-being was great. The Force is so nice to Access. All those years that I wasted devouring myself is a laugh. Of course eventually I made the past connection why the pain was in the arm, as results from demanding fealty.

This state of Acceptance is necessary if one wishes to have enough personal power to be successful and to make life worth living. However, Ascension for most people is not a priority. I want to say a few things to you, Vly, that you may want in some sort of a manual for teachers or something. (Who is writing this book for you anyway?) When I was a beast I wanted to “love.” I wanted to emote. I didn’t care to Ascend. Why leave this sexual body of mine? Beings such as my teachers, Real beings, knew the deliciousness of GOD. Teachers should always remember that their students are but beasts. The only reason I was there learning is because I wanted an easier life. I wanted to learn Magic. Some students are here because their robosis is dangerous to their health, this was true with me, but it wasn’t my reason for learning. After all, society imagines that health problems are necessary and completely out of the control of the individual. Actually everything that happens to the individual is necessary and is a result of that individual’s own aptitude or ineptitude. I repeat this all the time. Others are students for reasons of inheritance, because their forebears require it of them. Only after Accessing FORCE for long periods of time does a student Realise that it wants to remain bathed in IT. I have to constantly remember this unReality of the beasts to whom I teach Magic. I readily mention Ascension, yet it is an unfathomable concept to beasts. Every teacher should remember this... the Nature...

I have noticed that many beasts prior to climbing the ladder from this one to the next, just before death, are worn out and devoured by their RMAA sufficiently to enable them to Sense Reality in small glimpses. It is unfortunate that their bodies must be worn out for them to ken these glimpses. Unfortunately their bodies are too greatly devoured to Absorb what they ken. Their coloration no longer flashes and changes. It is stable and defines their destiny, it will match the next body they are drawn towards in rebirth. This knowledge all teachers acquire, but until a person can know of IT, this common knowledge of teachers is unavailable to beasts, such as students. I do not waste time telling them of Reality, only teaching how to Access IT. I have found that description is a waste of time. As my teacher you always spoke of Ascension. It is my life work, but as a student such was absurd, not desired and entirely unimaginable.

Gaming

Gaming is what this book is, in so many ways. RMAA, then R(W)MAA for the woman libber's: those who want to "no" anything and everything and choose to no the sexist pig that is writing this. How do you know if Vly is a woman or a man? Or is it many women and men. You can "no" any number of things. Why explain. Why waste your energy "no"-ing. For my part this is all utter nonsense written for people that don't know how to Sense.

Acceptance and Will seem to be opposites to the uninitiated, but actually they are ONE in the same. In Eorthe Plane Terminology/Templar Magic, this is called Conviction. All heroines and heroes have it. But remember that the Questing of these Wilful people is a game; a game in which each has offhandedly decided to indulge, yet they do so wholeheartedly, and with Conviction. The idiot that pretends to be doing something noble such as chasing after the Questing Beast is just that, an idiot. Such idiots are chasing the beast within; the faster, more seriously and harder they try, the faster, farther the imagining beast escapes. Your RMAA are young children that wish above all to be taken seriously. The gaming spirit does not include seriousness, but rather Conviction. These may seem the same, but they are not. To know and Accept Your own Natural bestiality and that of those around you, and to know and Accept and have faith that you have nothing to lose, even by the transition known as death to rebirth, is a very important objective. Open and Accepting. You have nothing to lose, but your imprisonment as a beast trapped in your Castle-unConsciousness. Your own bestiality is a joke and this you must Accept. The inherited concepts of physical, emotional and mental possibilities are imaginary and constraintive. I could intellectually describe and relate all sorts of nonsense, yet all words of an intellectual nature are communicative. You must develop an unEmotional attitude and more. Emotions are false Spiritual; they are bestial expressions of a Spiritual nature. It helps to practise acceptance. It helps to say to yourself that your RMAA and the RMAA that govern others are silly children whose entire separate (un)Realities are imprisoning (laugh at them). It is helpful that you practise Acts of Will, and that you concentrate on doing mundane acts intensely. But Conviction and Acceptance result, if you assume for a long time an enter Champion or *self* designed un-RMAA that laughs at the antics of your many "selves" and doesn't need nor formulates (recreates every task into a "no"/"love"/"Womb" programme) an emotional reason to do a task. For now Acceptance and Conviction must remain mere concepts that you don't and can't fully Understand. Eventually unEmotionalism will become Real to you/ eventually Spirituality will become Real to you. If you persevere, taking your RMAA less seriously and the beasts around you less seriously you will begin to Be. You will not have to frown. You will not have to "no" others or your existence. You will not need to be or remain a mere beast-of-the-field. For a long time even when you do the simplest of tasks you will be entering "Womb" as each task is performed. Slowly you will disIntegrate and soon love your "selves" and "they" will become subordinates to (true) self. At this point every little task you perform is done by your Holy Grail and in Reality, instead of unConsciously performed by a child pleasing a recalled "Womb"-er.

Never be afraid to experiment with your "selves." Never be afraid to experiment with the "selves" of others. In order to afford you correct attitude in regard to the learning process, I will reiterate. What have I already mentioned? Coloration. Sin. Karma. These are words and concepts. Morality is man-made, generally made by one human to manipulate another. An attitude (or lack of one) has nothing to do with words. Karma, sin and coloration at this stage of your development or lack of development is absurd to be concerned about. You are stuck on such concepts as embarrassment, shyness, bashfulness, guilt, etc. Concepts only ("no"s to initiate "love," flashing emotion/ exuding life-Force).

Ascension has little or nothing to do with social status, social norms, nor social institutions. Nor does your record have anything to do with Ascension. There is no tallyman. Ascension is simply a matter of attitude: if you Accept/Absorb, then you Acquire FORCE; become one with IT.

Is murder a sin? Yes, if you believe that it is.

Does it change your karma if you sin? Yes, if you believe that it does.

Belief is a conviction of your Being. If you lack Will; you will believe almost anything.

You colour your being. No one but you decides what colour or vibrational content you acquire. No one but you decides whether you must return to Eorthe Plane to learn other lessons, acquire balance, become Wilful. Everything that you experience is a lesson, particularly those you do game. If you are gaming you are a simple being that is Absorbing. Simplicity is next to Godliness. Sophistication is nowhere. It Keeps you grounded on this 48 transectional planet. The ONE LAW verses forty-eight.

Let us say you go to war to protect your country or to extend its boundaries. In this process you kill perhaps hundreds of other human beings. Each one is a murder. Have you sinned? If you believe that you have sinned, then you have sinned. If however you accept what you have done, then your coloration has not taken on the hue of a sinner. What if you were attacked in an alley and you take the life of your assailant? You have murdered, but have you sinned? For one person, whom does not Accept his or her actions, the act of self defence is a sin.

The true measure is how your holy is coloured. Man's laws mean nothing, rather your self image is all that exists in determining your destiny in the next ten seconds, tomorrow and after death.

Worry. A beast, particularly an expert dreamer (intellectual) can think and think itself into being a sinner, thus changing its coloration. Worry. For a "no" programmed beast, "no"-ing oneself or another is Natural. It is as Natural as a dog lifting its leg to pee. But understand that incessantly "no"-ing oneself or another is devouring, too. **FACT.** Did you know that most male dogs have to learn from the example of other male dogs how to lift the leg and pee? The Naturalness of human, its knowledge and love of evil is taught: the Primary Root.

Once your coloration is altered this new hue decides your karma, is your karma. You can tune your car or tune your karma. It is just that simple. But beasts that are "no" programmed find Acceptance impossible. *self* "no"-ing is "self" "love." This is why students must become expert in entering at Will attitudes, the entire range of emotional attitudes by acting and assumption or gaming.

A gamer may decide to see how effectively, during a war, she or he can murder as many enemy as possible. Such an endeavour is likened to a person working at any job that attempts to do that job as effectively as possible. Planting grape vines, cleaning a house or killing people? (Actually, human beings have the ability to colour, have the ability to exude life-Force in a particular coloration. This colouring can be very sticky and hard to not get sucked into instead of Accepting it if it is of a concentrated colour, and if it is exuded by a vast number of beings incessantly)

Inducing someone to do that which comes natural need not be a sin, unless you want to re-run your "love" programmes. Pavlovian Perverts are always "no"-ing. They are always falling in "love." They remain in the TRANCE state called "love" seeking that conjured place called "Womb." Let's say you ask a guy out and you have sex with him and he falls in "love." You don't fall in "love," rather you are just experimenting. You have sinned? Whose illusion are you? Does this guy see you, or are you "hallucinated" into being his MRMAA's "mother"? Does he want to be the victim? Is being the victim what his RMAA is programmed to be?

There is an old lady that had so perfected the Primary Root, that she snaps and screams and shouts at anyone that attempts to help her. The woman cannot see, hardly can she hear anything and she can barely walk. She has built a life from nothing and has a rather comfortable home. She is so Wilful that she is alive at ninety-six. She does not believe in after life or reincarnation, her gods are her own creations (possessions), so she will haunt her home after her grail's death. Yes, Jean Walsh (NV students) is still kicking and she is still dark and evil. Students visit her, for she has rooms to rent. But she also epitomises Will over Pavlovian darkness: re-running and perfection of "no"-ing. Her Will has her Access huge amounts of life-Force despite her incessant exudation of It in re-running "love" programmes. Students are instructed to interact with Jean without emoting. The use of people like Jean (petty tyrants) are most instructive.

I'm not letting you off the hook for your trespass; rather I am warning you, so that you should not allow your RWAA to discolour your being. Until you can Accept Force you will be sinning. Will and Acceptance go hand in hand, for they are synonymous. Don't be so serious. Game. Accept. Laugh. Here I have mentioned murder, sin and karma (which actually can result in (self) coloration and (self) judgement), but you should not

even imagine that you are Real enough to have any control over these. Can you remove your clothing on a public beach and not (pretend to) be embarrassed? Can you go through life without “worry” or an attitude? Seriousness keeps your RWAA’s armour(y) intact. You game to shock and dishevel this armour, so that Reality will be more Accessible (and you can induce Realisations — remove vast plates of armour, making you more Sensual). As for doing something wrong to someone else, if you find yourself in the environment of someone doing disharmonious things, you can game to effect the situation or you can Accept it and let the beasts learn their lessons.

Don’t waste energy judging. Make a decision and stick to it. Thinking is sleep inducing. Don’t imagine running and re-running thought processes are serving any other purpose than maintaining the Walls of your RWAA’s Castle-unConsciousness. Weaving thoughts (the helmet of the suit of armour) in a serious and concentrated way conjures a Dream Keep, which is imprisoning.

I have noticed religious fanatics, those past lifetime mass murderers, Nazi’s, etceteras, whose colorations have driven them to do “good” turn over in their minds verse upon verse (internal hogwash) of their adopted religious dogma, imagining that these incessant incantations makes up for their past, yet this enlarges their unConsciousness.

One other thing, the more WILL you acquire, the more Real you become. This makes you Accessible to the FORCE, which allows you to Know what you should be about: the specific acts and experiences you need to acquire balance, for then your holy can return to the grail and take you where It needs to go. This also enables you to Accept the emotings of others more readily. Gaming becomes intuitive. Things happen in flows of FORCE, a FORCE you can Sense and thus Absorb. When you Game you concentrate upon the task that you have randomly decided to accomplish, not for him or her or this or that remembered bairn attendant (or [false] god). The task is so intensely accomplished that R(M)WAA is watched but where “it” once would have fallen Asleep, for “they” easily become bored when not allowed to imagine (think), worry (internalise), act out with posture and physical demeanour; now instead “each” is witnessed/loved, for “each” becomes one with (true) self, is part of your Will and adds to “its” repertoire of simple motor dexterities, new dexterities of other than motor ones. (Math and evaluation are mental dexterities, but still motor or robotic. Unfortunately for beasts these mental dexterities were developed after emotionalisms were taught and developed after “loving” was taught and devised).

In this state of *self*, self and “self” union, Holy Grail (Druidic vernacular) exists and self-“self” learns more than mere motor dexterities. In this state the Union records and remembers all sorts of new dexterities of other than motor ones. Yes, I am speaking of Magic in its classical form. Granted any time you Access more Force while expending less, Magic is performed, but methodology goes to a higher level once you become Real (able to maintain Access to Reality).

Mindless, unConscious and robotic: repetition of fantasies, repetition of desires, repetition of rituals, repetition of desires, repetition of thoughts, repetition of fears (or any emotion), repetition of physical dexterities, repetition of postures, repetition of speech, vernacular, dialect maintain your Asleepness. So if you STOP your repetition your freedom takes place and the Walls of your prison fall asunder. You can walk backwards all day and if you are left handed you can try to be right handed, for this requires Conviction and concentration. This is called Will. In order to manoeuvre around your unReality your enter Champion has to be a gamer, trying to Access Reality and remain in IT, which is done by being different than you normally are; Wilfully/Consciously/with Conviction, trying to fool your “fools,” so that you can enter and remain in Reality. First, of course, you must assume Reality for the first time Wilfully, so that you can then know where you want to be, State of being you want to Assume, enter, remain. Joust/game.

Because Gaming is a state of Being it is difficult to explain to the uninitiated or Will-less. But as you practise, become Will, you will also come to know gaming. At the initial point gaming is entirely random acts of dexterity, usually of a physical nature, but not necessarily, however the mental ones must be cause, effect and Access to a terminus (not incessantly looped). Gaming must be conducted with Conviction and the Awareness of the operating “self”: enter Champion. The rest will eventually follow: insights, possibilities, Magic.

The ONE LAW

Earlier in the week we had gone afield to find freely emoted life-Force in large doses. Churches, sporting events and pubs are often the best places to find these. Most churches are not Spiritual at all. Unfortunately the first church we tried, this Methodist church, happened to be, so we ventured forth again.

Luckily we found a service in a Baptist church whose preacher TRANCED the audience and induced a huge release of life-Force (mostly negative, for that is the mechanism: first the preacher defined a “no” and then they re-ran their “love” or “*self-reprimand-word-touch-love*” (or guilt) programme, that like all these programmes of beasts ends in emoting as a *Reward*. He repeated the same “no” symbol over and over again and the Homo robotics flashed over and over again their individual emotings. It was delicious to Absorb. This preacher induced them to emote, but did not seem to Absorb much of the FORCE himself. It was as though he learned the technology, but had no grasp of the value of the emoting that he induced his congregation to release. He could have healed with it or killed with it, yet he himself emoted as much or more of his personal power than the serious beasts in his congregation. His Power increased a small amount but nothing close to that of my self and my students for that matter.

I visited a Methodist church with a student of mine later that week. There we met a curious person named Carol. A big-headed man (intellectual & well read), who was trying to relate to his group that which most of them already knew intellectually, but had trouble affecting. These are good people, as is Carol, their pastor, for this is why they were there: to learn how to Realise Ascension.

The ONE LAW is love, unmitigated love. This love is the FORCE or GOD that flows through all things, but cannot be accessed by a beast that is ruled by RMAA that are trained in maintaining a Dream Keep. Carol directed his students to a portion of a book that suggests that we are here to learn Acceptance: Matthew 6:14. Here is mentioned more verbosity. Carol’s entire lesson was that of the Reality of a Templar named Christ.

If you ever wish to Ascend you must learn to Accept/ Love (Absorb life FORCE), be Christ-like. Carol pointed out the trouble Christ was placed in by his beingness, one of pure love (Acceptance/Absorption). Carol went on to describe the façade of sociability, wherein members of societies often find love offensive. For instance Accepting homosexuality, or someone of a different race or the loving of a person of a different church is often “no”-ed, becomes another “love” programme. The skywalker, Christ was crucified because he was the ONE LAW. Christ was and made himself the ONE LAW. This is the only way to Ascension. For any one wishing to Ascend must first Accept sufficient FORCE. Pure love is synonymous with Acceptance.

Carol’s points came to a head after reading several passages from the Bible, and the student added his two cents (other passages that augmented his, as they say, argument (there was no argument though, for all whom were present were there to Accept). (it helps that there was a group in attendance who were (wore) a certain attitude)

He posed to those involved with this study group the hypothetical situation that if someone walked up to you and asked you, “how did you know you were a Christian, how did you know that what was right, was right concerning your actions. What would you say to them?” There were many answers. Finally an elderly lady sitting beside me, after many pat answers from others, said, “I know what is right and good from my heart, and the person will know what I’m about by my actions.” (Actually it is by your coloration, Attitude or state of Being)

Carol asked, “and what actions are those?”

Her answer was, “By how I act fairly towards others.”

Then, Carol coaxed, “And how do you act towards others?”

Her response was, “As Christ did.”

Christ was/is the ONE LAW, which is to say that he Accepted everyone. He was in fact such an expert lover/Absorber, that even the worst beast’s emotings were Accepted. The more Real and Conscious a person is the more readily she can intone those around herself. Recall those that incessantly practise or re-run the “love”

programme that is called hate. It is a short circuit: the *Reward* becomes the *Stimulus* and this is a loop that devours the indulger's life-Force. Once an expert such as a Christ accepts this FORCE the programme re-runner is sucked dry and merely feels euphorically tired. Empty, it becomes any attitude that a Christ might intone or Assume. This gathering did not include people that came wanting attention by "no"-ing, rather they entered this study class in a state of Acceptance as much as is humanly possible.

From here Carol asked the group what would happen to them socially if and when they started to act Christ-like? There were many answers, but one of my students smiled and said that, "you would get much free-FORCE from all those around you for most people "love" to hate." And Carol asked what he meant by that. The student said, "If you embraced homosexuals, African-Americans (the study group were all Caucasians), or even people outside ones own church, there would be many people disdaining such activities. This is because most people are beasts not Christ's and they would much rather hate than love. Christ and Christ-like individuals can Absorb/Accept the power of people's bestiality or emotional hatred and do great things for mankind with it." Since this statement Carol has become this student's student.

This brings to mind a number of clichés. Tend to your own fields. Judge lest ye be judged. Remember you're the one that's got to die when it's time for you to die¹. Don't try to be your brother's keeper, for it will suck you into "no"-ing. Accept. Unless an action of another person involves yourself, do not think about it, for thinking allows one of your RMAA to conjure "its" Dream Keep. If you wish to or choose to game and effect change in a situation, fine, but otherwise merely Accept that which people are doing to themselves and those in their personal environment as necessary, both necessary to the person doing the trespass and the one being trespassed against. Eorthe Plane is a place of learning; it is Schoolhouse Eorthe Plane. Many students get stuck in negating the actions of those they find in their ken. This is a waste of energy, for it is "love." But what is worse is when a student falls into the mote of her or his Castle-unConsciousness and can't get out, because he or she continues to "no" the actions of her or his own "selves." Looping of a "love" programme kills; "no"-ing is a devouring addiction.

For now you must stop the Asleepness of your own Dream Keep, stop feeding your own RMAA. Eventually your grail will become Grail, and holy will re-unite with it creating Holy Grail. Then you will be able to Accept as much FORCE as is made available by the beasts around you, stopping darkly coloured life-Force from becoming evil.

In the study group Carol asked about people's hatreds. One woman said that she lacked the ability to hate. She admitted having disdained someone's actions, but holding a grudge was not a part of her way of life. Before the meeting was ended, Carol asked everyone to ponder the following. Would you hate someone that murdered your little girl? Or would you be able to Accept the person's actions and love that person?

During this meeting there were a few individuals that pretended to be too embarrassed to talk, to be watched. A person that is that unReal can never Accept. The individual may affect an act that appears to be Accepting and loving, but one thing is lacking and this is Conviction. Christ had Conviction. He Accepted his crucifixion and the actions of those beasts around him (actually it was a major manipulation of his students for generations). For some it takes years and even several lifetimes to acquire Acceptance. Hopefully this book will give you some insight as to how Will/Acceptance can be Real-ised. But actually it is up to you. All I can do is remind you that it is important. Something you know is so, but that you neglect. This book is old news, all of it. But Realise that Ascension, change in yourself takes Will. By giving mouth service to a Christ, or a God is irrelevant. Your Ascension is entirely in the hands of the individual. There is no God worshipping method, religion or way of getting around your personal growth in Will. All the books, all the beliefs, all the words are nought. You are your own way to Ascension. I am just telling you some of the Natures of schoolhouse Eorthe Plane which includes the Nature of you animals.

¹ If Six Were Nine by Jimi Hendrix , from the album Axis Bold As Love ©1967, Yaneta Co. Ltd., Nassau Bahamas, c/o Clark Enterprises, Inc.

That Really Pisses Me Off!

Many of these beasts imagine that there is something Really wrong with this or that person and they spend their life-Force and any idle time re-running the sort of “love” programme called hatred. It could be their spouse, mother-in-law, mother, father, sister or brother. Some of the basis for “no”-ing might be imaginary or it may be Real, but the fact that the beast only recalls and dwells upon the negatives or colours the adversary’s traits negatively is Understandable. As understandable as a dog lifting its hind leg to pee if it is a male dog, particularly on a charged electric fence.

Being a beast, as well, the object of their affections will afford their RMAA good reason and a steady supply of “no”s. Beasts readily accommodate one another by being beastly.

You can Understand why you must not only Accept your own bestiality, but also the bestiality of others. Those long discussions about this person or that, or for that matter about your “selves,” does nothing but feed your own Asleepness. You can decide to Game and manipulate the beast in question or you can Accept the beast and work around it or ignore it until you are strong enough. Once you Real-ise that these are mere beasts, you will stop having them replace bairn attendants of your youth in your RMAA’s hallucinations. Being a “no” programmed beast makes you desirous to “love.”

It is necessary to define your environment, so that you can control it effectively. But if you find that you dredge up the same problem and memory of the same person, then you are merely “love”-ing this beast and (hallucinating) casting him or her into the role of a familiar childhood bairn attendant. Being pissed off at someone is merely emoting over and over again. What a waste! This book does what you incessantly do to weave your Dream Scape ... Drone on...

A Hug is Worth...

Johnny would wake up in the morning a bit tense. He'd "no" the fact of having to get up, then get up. He'd wear a frown. He'd "no" everything and anything, not because anything was actually wrong for he was of a wealthy enough family and was above average looks and very healthy and smart enough in school, but only because he had been taught that crawling toward the "no" gets attention.

The day before at breakfast he was systematically "reprimand-word-touch-loved" by his father, for Johnny was always ignored unless something came up that needed his father's attention. In order to ensure his father's "love" and attention Johnny would neglect to do his chores or do them wrong or incompletely. The chores were not difficult or time consuming, but to do them correctly accessed less "love" from his father than doing them less than correctly. Johnny did not forget these chores on purpose. Consciously, but some part of him had figured this strategy years earlier. That part of personality figured out that neglecting his chores (a "no") would guarantee that he would be spoken to, which was better than being completely ignored.

Every morning Johnny played this "love" game. Every morning a part of him entered "its" emotional state of apprehension hoping to be "loved" by his father. This state of apprehension is the same state Johnny's mother entered when she did tasks when Johnny was in her womb and she entered before picking Johnny up as he crawled to the negative to elicit attention/ "love" once he was well out of the womb.

Every morning across the planet people look for their "Daddies" or "Mommies" and usually grab any hapless soul that they find in their sight to be their "Daddy" or "Mommy." For Johnny's these are bosses, employees, school teachers, lawyers, etc. Some may be the greatest minds of the planet and yet they, without Realising it, run and re-run their "love" programmes.

Even Johnny, as he overlooked a chore that was supposed to be done, did so in a TRANCE, out-of (present) Time. A DRMAA ruled him as he did a chore incorrectly or when he neglected to do the chore at all, so that he could, "it" could, be assured of breakfast "love" the next day. Even weeks of neglected studies were religiously followed in this familiar state of "loving" apprehension in order to access "love." Breakfast "love" is very common in families that eat breakfast together, for it is a time for interaction and discourse. By neglecting duties the discourses often involve "reprimand-word-touch-love." Such "no"-ing computes.

If your co-worker or boss must have a 'scene' every morning you will know why. He is addicted to breakfast "love." Ninety seven percent of humankind are Homo robotics. Yes, I am talking about you.

Talking is cheap. Talking is symbolic: "word-touch-love." What every beast (being that was never allowed to free-associate the FORCE directly. Never learned love) wants is Real touch love.

A hug stops the TRANCE, draws the beast from "Womb" and into Reality, for what does the beast actually want? There are those so imprisoned in their Dream Keep of "Womb" that they will keep "no"-ing by pushing you away, while using some incantation to sublimely act as *Stimulus* in order to re-return to "Womb," which is the trick that is the armoury of RMAA. It is often a negatively coloured phrase such as, "you don't have to do that," or "I don't need that," or "I don't want you to do that" (a "no"). So in order to have the world of Asleepness STOPPED, you have to insist and hold the beast for an extended period of Real touch love.

A random or gamed hug does more to bring a person to Real Time than all the words spoken and written in the last millennium. Of course a "loving" beast will imagine hallucinate or pretend that the necessary "no" is there to act as *Stimulus*. If Johnny had been hugged every morning, randomly, every greeting (when a person first comes into another's ken after being elsewhere) then communications in Reality would have taken place and chores would have been done. Lack of touch-love makes the creature crazy, for it compels the ruling "it" to re-run technology that is *Stimulated* by a "no" Real but usually imagined or fabricated. Hold the beast until it holds you back, releases (removes its armour). Sometimes it is helpful to have placed an act of camaraderie symbol in the beast or another symbol as *Stimulus* to induce humorous *Response*, so the beast will shift to a more Real stance. Then the hug will be more likely to be effective.

Sweet Mary Held in Suspended Animation

Johnny and Mary were at a sailboat race-weekend. During such functions many people camp out on their parent's yacht or in tents they set up at the yacht club. The weekend is filled with boat racing of all sorts and the boats are of many designs. There is a musical band to dance to Saturday nights after a barbecue dinner either at some one's mansion or at the various yacht clubs. Everyone knows everyone so security is no problem.

During the Saturday dance Johnny approached Mary and asked if she wouldn't like to make use of his tent for sexual pleasures. Mary declined. Johnny went about finding two others with whom to make use of the tent that night.

"love" programmes are initiated by the "no" as *Stimulus*. Johnny took Mary at her word when she declined, but Mary was merely running the familiar "no" of her "love" programme, and continued enTRANCED in it in regards to Johnny. This enTrancing can be called longing, still waiting for *Response*, in (apprehension and stress) Desire (for "Womb"). I have also used the term restraint to describe it previously.

Mary apparently longed for Johnny for many years, for Sam, her cousin, would speak of it every time Johnny and he met in a bar. In fifteen years Johnny had seen Sam maybe five or six times and each time they touched upon the subject anew, so that state of limbo or apprehension, "desire" or "Womb" apparently was where Mary remained in regards for Johnny. In her thoughts of Johnny a RWAA of hers always placed her in this limbo. She used the "no" of having never made it with Johnny. ... she will one day, but for now it is "no," but one day, one day... and in the meantime the "no" regarding Johnny keeps her in "love" with him.

Johnny laughed off any suggestion that Mary liked him or that he might date her for Johnny was uneducated and poor whereas Mary was rich, beautiful and well educated. He would call her and she would "no" out of habit (playing – hard-to-get, a cultural "no"-ing of these beasts). Sam had told him to ask her out, had told him she had the hots for him. A year or two later this was repeated. That hard-to-get programme is so like the beast. How utterly ridiculous. Fifteen years and Mary still wanted Johnny's *Response*, which is absurd. Johnny never was intimate with her and that night years ago as teenagers Johnny had only honestly and openly asked if Mary had wanted to enjoy sex with him. Mary had declined and for Johnny that was Accepted, but for Mary it was merely an initiator ("no") for a "love" programme and in regard to Mary she held herself in this TRANCE, "desire," all those years. "desire" is "Womb," a place in intellectual imaginings. In regard to Johnny, Mary sustained herself in "desire," which is an indication of the fanaticism possible from Homo robotics. Once the "no" is defined or rather indulged in, "no" programmed beasts leave Reality. Anytime that Mary "feels" alone, all she does is remember the "no" of Johnny. She then is back out-of-(present)Reality and in the zone of "Womb." Safe within her ("Womb") room, she touches no one and no one touches her².

Isn't "love" grand? She can always have the "no" of her "Johnny's programme" to comfort her ... any moment of the day or night she can send herself into the safety of TRANCE. All she needs is this or some other "no." From there she can enter all sorts of rooms of her Dream Keep, all sorts of Dreamscapes. Her fantasy begins with the "no" that he doesn't love her, and then she is so alluring (provocative in a slutty kind of way in her fantasy) that he can't help himself, or perhaps in her fantasy she does the "no" of socially unacceptable behaviour that gets him going such as initiating a kiss and then placing his hand on her breast or in her crotch. As she fantasises she might start massaging her body. Next she may be in the recalled past of her first masturbatory orgasm. Again, done as a *Response*, accomplished out-of-(present)Time. She is then only able to leave that programme after she has emoted in *Reward*, unless a SHOCK requires otherwise. "love" can readily be found. Every action, every task performed is for "love;" everything is a conditioned response ending in *Reward*, emoting. Habitual thieves, bad boys or girls, law breakers, cheaters, or those beasts that habitually do anything that their RMAA or RWAA can imagine is a "no" in order to initiate a "love" programme.

Johnny was merely fashioned into a "no" in whose memory she could indulge any time she found herself idle. Some call this programme pining.

² Simon and Garfunkel's tune "I am a Rock, I am an Island" [The Songs of Paul Simon as Sung by Simon and Garfunkel and Paul Simon Himself](#). New York: Knopf, 1972

Every chance meeting with Sam brought the subject of Mary, who apparently still wanted Johnny to ask her out, all these years. This is just how unReal beasts are. To “no” is to “love” (swoon, swoon, swoon).

The Look of “love”

Not all, but many people, when they work, wear a facial ‘work’ expression that is discernible from other expressions (attitudes). It may be grave, a frown, even a smile according to the devising of their suit of armour(y) of the RMAA that animates them when they enter the TRANCE of “work.” Again this is a “love” programme. They may define something as a “no” and then *Respond* to this coloured, imagined or redefined *Stimulus*. I say coloured for merely setting up tables for a meal may be coloured to be “work:” “ I have to set the table” (for the table is unset - negative attitude).

For the most part Homo robotics colours driving the kids to school and to a friend’s house as negative’s. In fact in order to do the slightest activity first they must colour or devise a “no” *Stimulus* in order to set in motion all tasks. Granted there may be something that they would prefer doing rather than driving kids around, but that is pure and utter intellectual rationale; it is feeding their Asleepness (more excuses). The fact is that “no”-ing is their addiction, for the animal can’t stand being untouched, un-“loved,” out of the womb. If you were to give a person unlimited free time, unlimited wealth, still they would find something to “no,” for that is how they were trained to believe “love” is accessed: STILL CRAWLING TO THE NEGATIVE in a state of apprehension that someone will touch them.

You can spend your lifetime in intellectual rationale, but if you were to be filmed for ten days straight and you reviewed these films, you would notice how little you smile and how much you frown and how rarely your expression portrayed a look that indicated that you enjoyed life. This is not because your life is so very awful, but rather it is because you are addicted to “love” and to re-enacting the Primary Root. I know my reading audience, for if you can afford this book you have all that you need to survive: food, shelter and clothing. But most importantly you have time to perfect your Asleepness.

I recall a lady that would, whenever she set the table, swept the floor or did any mundane task, enter a TRANCE and don a suit of armour(y) that would skulk and breathe in a fashion that an athlete would exhibit if she ran a couple of miles. I never dreamt that setting a table could be quite so tiring nor quite so distasteful, what with her frown she’d wear while “working.” There was no hurry for she was retired with nothing to do, no place to go, so what was with the huffing and out of breathe puffing? A number of times I’d ask if she was feeling all right or if anything was wrong, but the skulk and the breathing was merely a part of that “work”-ing RWAA’s suit of armour(y). To look at her set the table was a seemingly hard and distasteful task. It turns out that her mother and sister both “work” in the same way.

Her shift in personalities was very pronounced. Many people’s RWAA shift often, as every task is initiated. While these shifts may not be so visually apparent, they do in fact shift with every task. I readily sense shifts, but even you will be able to sense facial changes and a change in demeanour, their voice and their eyes.

Observe your “selves” and those of your fellow humans.

Because “love” is initiated by a “no,” lovers usually don an attitude of the “no,” which is displayed in their expression and demeanour as they propose marriage or propose making love or propose a closer relationship, or during the verbal declaration of their love. Hilariously, this highly touted thing: falling in love, is displayed as possibly the worse experience of a person’s life, if their demeanour and facial expressions are any indication. This is not because sex is unpleasant nor because love is painful, but merely because the beasts “love” rather than love. As I read in a magazine recently, “love hurts.” Ridiculous. Real love does not hurt.

As for the accoutrements of “ones” armour, to deny the facial expression Wilfully of an “idiot” is an important siege tool.

Sensitives

On occasion I have found myself with the task of stopping the perfecting of the Tertiary Root of evil by an individual. Actually most human’s die prematurely from the perfecting of the Secondary via the Tertiary into the Cinquenary Root of evil at the early age of eighty, seventy or even sixty. However those that succeed in perfecting just the Tertiary very quickly and often at a young age are considered suicides. When a psychologist, therapist, or psychiatrist tells me nothing could have been done about a particular suicide, I think, hogwash.

These people merely perfected a programme. By the use of Will any programme can be denied and eventually changed. The question is does the therapist have Will, and can she or he supply the necessary Patience, Discipline and Understanding to the potential suicide? First it helps to know the problem in order to know how to Stop the robotic activity. But because the problem is nonSense and usually nonsense, actually this will reveal itself to the individual as periods of Access (Reality) are lengthened. **Revealed to the individual.**

The problem is that these individuals are very sensitive and can sense all these Pavlovian Perverts that surround them flashing negative emotions by entering the emotional states of pity, remorse, pain, fear and loathing, etceteras as each enters the *Reward* portion of their own “love” programmes. Sometimes there exists a reason for entering these states, but usually these beasts-of-the-field are merely putting on and perfecting performances/running Pavlovian programmes that end in the assuming of certain emotional states that happen to be negative ones: emotional states that are rendered dark by the individual. To an awakened person all emotional states are devouring and thus undesirable (unless you have the ability to Absorb freely exuded life-Force). Acceptance/true love is the opposite of all emotions. Emotions emote life-Force, while love/Acceptance is the Absorption of all Force, no matter its coloration.

I feel I should also tell you here that while a foetus is in the womb it is recording everything its host says. When beasts imagine they are lonely they often devise “love” programmes to rerun in order to remain safe and feel “loved.” They talk up all sorts of “love scenes” where “they” are the centre of attention and thus “loved.” One common one is where the poor thing is unloved so it commits suicide (or talks externally about committing suicide): “I’ll show them, I will commit suicide,” the host of the foetus repeats out loud. It may rerun this “love” fantasy anytime it finds itself alone and unappreciated. And once out of the womb the child finds itself also isolated and unloved on occasion and it finds itself saying some of the phases it heard in the womb repeated whenever it has a like attitude that its host had when one of her “selves” re-ran its suicide “love” scenario.

The task of stopping these stupid creatures from committing suicide is a matter of training them to stop self-inducing TRANCE. These animals are entering “Womb” and are re-running incessantly one “love”/“no”/“Womb” programme. They are looping it: using the *Reward* portion as *Stimulus* over and over again. *Stimulus Response Reward, Stimulus Response Reward, Stimulus Response Reward, Stimulus Response Reward, Stimulus Response Reward, Stimulus Response Reward, Stimulus Response Reward, Stimulus Response Reward*, over and over again. They get darker and darker impatiently. It gets in their head and unless they STOP these World’s of their Asleepness, they imagine that they will... Well to stop, they kill themselves.

These are just dumb animals that don’t know how they got imprisoned in their Dream Keep, but they know they are in fact looping and looping and flashing and flashing emotions.

I have told you that in every person there exists a predominance of either Patience, Discipline or Understanding. There is also a predominance of Spirituality, The Physical or Mental. In an Homo robotics the predominance of The Physical when coloured by the “no” programme can lead the individual, so affected into over indulgence in sex, eating, drugs or/and drinking: things of the flesh, hedonism. Such a person may become a drunk or be into all sorts of perversions of the flesh. If this is tempered with Will or fanaticism in a more positive frame of reference these individuals may become great athletes, muscle builders, health freaks, even healers.

People that have a predominance in Mental abilities tend to read a lot, and to think and ponder a great deal upon how things work. In a negative bent this can manifest as an escape into thought, intellectualism and insanity, purely for thought’s sake, which leaves them out of the Realm of contact with many people and coupled with “no”-ing the fact that they need and want Real touch from other people (furthering their unRealness), which is normal and results from having lived 9 months surrounded by a womb. They prefer thought to interaction with their fellows. Thinkers Realise something is wrong with themselves and other Homo robotics, but the “no” programme is such that it can’t be quite Realised, quite understood, simply because of the way in which conditioned responses work: *Response* is taking the beast out of Time and momentarily re-returning the beast to the unTime when the “love” programme was first devised or taught.

Spiritual people have a propensity for being very sensitive. And in a negative bent this manifests as emotionalism. These cry at the drop of a hat. These can Sense that there is pain and dark and negative emotions being exuded and they imagine that it is their doing, their fault. They usually have been aided in their mistaken responsibility for all the darkness in their personal environment by a bairn attendant who wanted to be the centre of attention and made themselves so by blaming everything that was wrong in their lives on their child, or constantly voiced their imagined hardships to their predominant Spiritual child in order to elicit attention from them. Often times these Sensitives did great injustices in previous lives or had great injustices done to themselves and learned to lie to themselves that these misdeeds were “love.” Administrators and inmates of concentration camps often are reborn as Sensitives: great self-pitiers, guilty of all of human suffering or addicted to suffering because they had adapted so readily to the pain and misery of the life as a prisoner. These had come to “love” the abuse. They had been Will-less to do anything about it. So, instead these had in a past life or have in this lifetime perfected the Tertiary Root of evil. Will-less.

It hardly matters the reason or method of their madness (or for that matter your own). They lack Will. Will/Consciousness, one in the same, is The One Law. It can be described as the balance between the three components of the Law of Three: Understanding, Patience and Discipline, and between Spirituality, The Mental and The Physical. These beasts may indulge in the programme called imPatience, misUnderstanding or Laziness: conjuring their Dream Keeps non-stop and thus fashioning them into tombs, into very weird looking tombs, I might add. Beasts-of-the-field internalise, incessantly running and re-running all the programmes to elicit attention that they were taught by society. Most of these performances are negative and evoke the re-running of “love”/“no”/“Womb” programmes from their personal environment which the Sensitive senses as pain or other negative coloration’s being emoted by these fellow Pavlovian Perverts.

Here are these Sensitives trying to get Real love, but in order to fit in they must run “love” programmes; eliciting negative emotings. The more they try to get love, the more “love” they elicit, the more negativity they cause others or so they imagine. Actually their fellow Pavlovian Perverts are merely re-running their own Pavlovian programmes. But the Sensitive and expert self-pitier imagines that they are the cause of the problem and must eliminate the problem. Physical Sensitives. A bit redundant? In a culture that restrains Sensuality in order to condition its members to become sex maniacs the Sensitive, knowing that it needs Real touch love does not get it so it fills the gap with the *self* “touch-love” of internal dialogue. These beasts run and re-run the Tertiary, entombing themselves with “*self*-reprimand-word-touch-love.” Never Really getting what they need. Real love. Real touch love.

To stop the suicide one must induce them to stop their internal dialogue. This is true of your insanity, just as it is true in regards to the perfecting self-pitier or individual with a propensity for suicide. Discipline of the most basic kind is needed: Physical Discipline, which requires that the practitioner remain in Reality. The animal must be STOPPED. Stopped from conjuring the Walls. This requires discipline on the part of the therapist: 24 hours a day. And a physical restraint is not unheard of, although I have never had to use one, for I can remain in present time and hold another there until their R(W)MAA drop from exhaustion, for I feed off the Force (and their emotings in particular). It is where I live, Reality. But for those therapists that do not live in Reality, this will require periods of great discipline for themselves.

As the student is held in Reality I slowly draw him or her a more accurate picture of their prison/of their Asleepness and the Asleepness of the world’s of human. My voice is “word-touch-love” to its ruling RW(M)AA. I am there when they awaken from sleep and I am there when they fall into slumber again. Sometimes I visit their dreams to guide them through past life problems that have hung them up and entrapped them in a tower gaol of their Dream Keep. But this is unnecessary. It merely shortens the period of self Realisation, which they will experience as they remain, via their growing Will, in Reality. Initially it is my Will, particularly for the first 72 hours. I become their petty tyrant.³ I supply and enforce Reality, for “their” dreaming is that which is endangering. To have the person Do a task that requires attention of a physical nature is all that is required. To add the understanding of what they are and how Homo robotics was mis-conditioned is

³ Carlos Casteneda series of books about the Toltec system.

Really all one has to do. The technology of focusing upon the physical or Physicality so intensely to stop the weaving of dreamscapes by the intellectual aspect of the suit of armour(y) is all that is needed. I watch the person and anytime I see a "it" take over, which can be seen in facial expressions and eye movements, I remind the student to concentrate on the task at hand: "concentrate on my breathing- match it." "That's good, now listen to yourself breathe, control it," "Slowly watch how your hands work as your robotic-man-at-arms uses "its" simple dexterity to perform this task." "This should stop your internal dialogue that is weaving your demise, your Dream Keep." "By simplifying the robotic-man-at-arms by patience and discipline, demanding fealty of the robotic-man-at-arms that is animating you at a given time is love and attention of your robotic-man-at-arms, which is what "it" always wants." Your robotic-man-at-arms wants your attention. This is why "it" keeps getting faster and faster, thinking and thinking, weaving and weaving "Womb," that TRANCE "it" places you in all the time.

Again. The student must be compelled to remain in (present) Time. He or she must be afforded Understanding. She or he must come to Understand that what it was taught, the armoury it has developed, to elicit attention is flawed. The student must come to an Understanding the Nature of the beast: him or herself, as well as 97 percent of the human population. The student must come to Real-ise how to Access Force by STOPPING the world's of their Asleepness. But in order to do this they must STOP their conjuring of their own ("Womb") prison or Dream Keep: by STOPPING internal dialogue ("its" use of the helmet or intellectual part of the robotic-man-at-arm's suit of armour), as well as STOPPING the use of armoury (external dialogue used to elicit attention). I have them focus on Reality, DO tasks There, which is called Magic, the manipulation of the Four Eorthe Elements. Such things as cutting wood for the fire, or building a house, or sanding some furniture are all ways to deal with Reality and immerse one's self in IT. First I have them Joust. This takes them to Reality. They have forgotten what IT feels like for their childhood was so long, long ago. Unless I point out where they are, these silly beasts try to return to Asleepness and then must be compelled to Joust once again. Eventually they begin to Sense Reality and want to remain Here. Of course, they become divorced from the insane and perverted world's of the Asleep. Now when they work Magic such as the mundane tasks I have them accomplish, they do so without trying to conjure their prisons by hallucinating the existence of bairn attendants. Generally in three to five days they no longer want to ever find themselves again in the nightmare of that 97 percent of humankind. They usually go on to develop their predominance into something helpful for humankind, tempering and seeking a more balanced being in themselves.

Sometimes they return to me if out of their loneliness they have tried to re-enter the nightmare of the Asleep or their Sensitivity makes coming in contact with conjurers (Homo robotics) painful. It helps to position their Understanding. These students must Realise that their grail needs Real touch love until it is convinced that it is part and parcel of the Force. Part and Parcel. Don't glance over this phrase, for it describes very aptly the relationship of the individual with God/Force, and initially with your planet. Many of these Sensitives must join tribes of people like themselves and rarely visit the world of Sleepwalkers and Dreamers ever again. Positioning their Understanding can also do the trick, but it involves affording them insulation via cynicism and disdain for that 97 percent and taking the student among them and showing them how to Accept these beasts' emotings and to store this randomly exuded life-Force. Part of this positioning involves the Understanding that this Absorption will help to preserve the living creature that is the planet Earth, and also the student/Sensitive may be able to learn to Shift their Attitude and empathise and thus STOP individual Dreamers from working their Dark conjurings and induce flashes of Reality- creating gaping holes in the Walls of these beast' Castle unConsciousness, which is what I did to STOP these Sensitives from committing, what humankind calls, suicide. If I am successful in positioning their Understanding, and their growth of Will continues as a result of their going afield and Absorbing readily from emoting beasts-of-the-field (dreaming and "self" enTRANCED human beings), then they can live amongst the creatures of darkness and do the work of awakening others. But more importantly they help to neutralise the effects of evil among the Asleep. *Understand* that those 97 percent are incessantly releasing discoloured or darkened life-Force at millisecond intervals as they perform their "love" programmes. Every mundane action is a re-run "love" programme: walking, opening a knob on a door, speaking a greeting, brushing ones hair, etc.

Having had a propensity for self-pity is indicative of a being that has a specific coloration from past life activities; its holy has a coloration from a past grail (some cultures call this a karmic debt). It is helpful for them to remain in the company of human beings, particularly human beings that need their help and consideration, but recall that Will was lacking, which is why in this lifetime or in a past one self-pity had become so developed in the first place. But unless such an individual can be positioned to Accept the emotings of beasts, then they cannot safely remain among them. Some are slow to learn Acceptance/love and unless they do they will tend to loop into “love” and blaming themselves for the pain of others which is the death loop of self-pity. Anyone can go to the Force and bath in It, but to Accept the coloration’s of beasts often is difficult for self-pitiers. The problem is simply that Sensitives empathise, which means they readily identify with the beast of whom they find themselves in the company. I am glad that at least these Sensitives aren’t adding to the darkness by being emoters, nor inducing other beasts to emote readily. Above it all they are glad to still be alive and learning.

They Marry their Mothers

In youth his mother was huge, and once “no” programmed, he learned how to elicit attention from her. Eliciting attention can pass for love, but actually it is part of a conditioned response called “love.”

Who does he marry? Well if he marries young he may rebel and try to find a slim and unassuming child to make his own. In a later or second marriage he may just marry the spitting image of his ogress mother with her abusive “love” programmes well instated.

Being a Pavlovian Pervert, a beast-of-the-field, as a young man, he or more accurately a RMAA within misses “its” mother: specifically his mother-dealing-robotic-man-at-arms (MRMAA). “it” misses someone to “love” him in the way he had been conditioned. Invariably such a beast, ruled by their MRMAA, transforms their skinny little thing into a “mom.” Getting her pregnant, going to those all-you-can-eat restaurants and taunting her for not “getting her money’s worth of food,” encouraging her to eat man sized portions, or taking her to ice cream parlours: he doesn’t Realise what his MRMAA is doing, yet if he could be objective he would note just how meticulously, incessantly and methodically this MRMAA goes to work transforming this skinny girl he has married into being the ogress- mother “it” so longs for. This also involves noting just what irritates her and then doing just those activities that elicit those “lovingly” negative responses from her.

Sandy

Sandy went ashore to party in Estonia. Upon his return at 0200, quite drunk, he turned his stereo up high and let it rip. I was coming down the ladder from the 3rd Mates' stateroom, having repaired his toilet, and happened to hear the racket. I discovered that the source was none other than Sandy's stateroom. I tried the door and there was Sandy looking out the porthole as though everything was normal. I motioned that he should turn the volume knob down and he responded by turning the thing off. I turned and walked toward the elevator and the visiting commodore looked relieved to have had me happen by and deal with the problem, what with him being a stranger and a Naval rather than Merchant Marine officer- sort of an outsider. Sandy followed me out and started a loud conversation, which I cut short with: "Sleep well, Sandy."

Sandy's RMAA had him do these irritating things in order to elicit attention. "he" apparently was starving for attention and went about executing the weaponry he had devised and held in memory as a significant and effective way to elicit attention from others. It of course ended in a reprimand from both the Chief Engineer, his direct superior as well as the Captain of the ship. These sorts of occurrences were keeping him from ever sailing under his 1st Engineer's license for this company. Sandy has a monkey on his back and it is a personality within.

These RMAA can be Real pains in the neck. "their" games or armoury, filled with programmes useful in the elicitation of attention, often, are of a negative bent. To control the 'calling forth' of these Pavlovian Perverts is quite a task. First though one must Realise that "they" are the source of ones problems. Once being aware of the problem one can then deal with it or deal with each of "them" as they manifest "themselves."

“Sister,” “Mother”

You work in a shirt factory with a lot of other women. There you are seated with a co-worker, both your attitudes are loose for you are both animated by your SRWAA or “sibling” robotic-women-at-arms. You are telling jokes, these SRWAA’s suit of armour(y) may like to share secrets, share “no”s about themselves or others for that is the initiator of “love” programmes as “they” were trained and designed. Sister-dealing-robotic-women-at-arms are cordial, very loose of physical attitude, relaxed, expressions of “their” faces are happy and smiling.

However, when certain subjects arise (symbols) call forth a MRWAA or “mother” dealing RWAA: facial expressions change, physical posture changes (may change discernibly), even breathing patterns change. These may be anxious or worried or however they were designed to be when the individual’s MRWAA was devised, as the individual dealt with her mother.

What may be a subject that shifts your SRWAA into a MRWAA may not shift some other person’s so that one of you might find the shift that takes place, your other personality, a bore and either break-off the conversation or try to shift it back to something fun and intimately sibling-like.

You must become acutely aware of shifts in ruling personalities, for this is both instructive and empowering. Pavlovian Perverts can be like puppets on a string. They can be readily manipulated.

The Pecker Doesn't Work Syndrome

Doctor: Professionally speaking I have run into quite a number of clients whose pecker worked fine for three or even 23 years, but all of a sudden the thing quit working. We have a term for this. Impotence. We have drugs, we have implants. We can even put a pump in the damn thing, but usually can't Really correct the problem.

There is a reason for something happening, but if one doesn't accept the existence of the "no" programme, then very little makes sense. For centuries they blamed their misunderstanding upon a devil or some other superstitious nonsense – oh, that's right, they still blame it on some nebulous nonsense, instead of Real-ising what actually is taking place. Impotence, immorality, murder, race hatred or any hatred for that matter, psychosomatic illness all seem to be unfathomable as long as people ignore or pretend (imagine) that the "no"/"love" programme was never taught humankind. Sex during pregnancy created the Castle-unconsciousness that makes Reality cloudy and inAccessible. I often listen to, what are considered intelligent people, discuss the actions of friends, relatives, business associates as well as news stories about criminals and people that have done bad and 'seemingly' irrational things. Without taking the Roots of evil into account, they are pissing into the wind. These learned people are mere idiots talking about idiots no matter how many degrees they have. Homo robotics aren't motivated by right and wrong, but rather 'how can I get attention'. The "love" elicitation programme could motivate the beast to do good or right things, but experience has taught the beast that negative activities elicit attention more readily, so they do negatives. Rational thought does enter into the process of conditioned responses by a mere beast-of-the-field. You first must *Understand* the basic premise and motivating intent of the beast. When the beast, pardon, when you cut your hand and keep re-injuring the same cut or bruise on your body, do you suppose such actions are irrational? The basic premise in the learned is the problem. These imagine that their fellow beasts are motivated to action by doing the right thing, when to the beast the right thing is "crawling towards the negative to elicit touch-love, a nearly womb-like experience.

Ninety-seven percent of the population is mis-programmed. Right and wrong is not part of the equation that motivates Homo robotics. **Eliciting attention is.**

In regard to sexual stimulation, or having a "self" initiate "its" sex programme, which is another "love"/"no" programme; society has taken care of this, for it has defined sex as a "no-no." Mating practises reflect this. The woman is playing ("no") hard to get. Society defines sex as a "no." There are all sorts of restrictive (restraint and excess) cultural innuendoes: clothing the body (nudity is a "no"), un-acceptance of any mention of sexuality, etceteras that make sex readily initiated for the "no" programmed beast.

After years of "love" many men come to love their spouses and actually can no longer "no" or "love" them. These creatures only see this wonderful mate, best friend and no longer want to "no" her or life in general in regards to their life shared together. This makes the "no" required to *Stimulate* the sex programme impossible. Impotence.

A husband can rationally support the idea of marriage, the sanctity of marriage and would do nothing to hurt his old and trusted friend and companion who has been his wife for so many years. Being a well trained beast, trained in "no"-ing, such a person becomes unable to do any task without first initiating the programme that performs the necessary sequences to get the job done, particularly sex. Many men "love" and may even love their wives, which is to say they accept the cultural ideas of marriage and its exclusive and exclusionary "love." After being married for some time, sex is no longer a cultural "no," and if the individual can no longer pretend or colour sex lurid or a "no," they have a difficult time initiating the programme. The wife wants it, society condones it, the children, on the occasion that there are grown up children, no longer have to be kept from it (coloration) and so no longer being a "no" for the man, sex, as a "love"/"no"/"Womb" programme, cannot be initiated, for there is lacking a *Stimulus* for the initiation of the sex performing routine, which is a "no"/"love" programme, like all the rest of a specific "self"'s programming.

Whereas a hooker, mistress, lover-on-the-side, on the other hand, can supply the required "no" to compute or initiate a sexual "love" programme. It isn't that the spouse doesn't love, rather the problem is the opposite.

To get back to “loving” the wife in a sexual way, the “no” programmed beast-of-the-field must have “no”:

1. colour (fantasising) lovemaking with the wife as lurid sex, or
2. having been caught with a mistress (on rare occasions this helps to fool the RMAA, for they relive their “naughtiness-in-parent’s-eyes”), or
3. surreptitiously carrying on “no”/“love” on the side with a prostitute or mistress, so that “it” can colour such actions as cheating on the “lover” that they “keep” on the sly by having sex with the wife.
4. Encourage the wife to have an affair, so that she can be “no”-ed readily, perhaps perceived as a slut in the mind’s eye of the Pavlovian Pervert’s.

In old age many couples come to Realise that sex and true love can be the same **or separate**. Exclusive sexual “love” is a mechanism of religious dogma to create high populations. **A person has the capacity to love more than one individual**. One day all will love all, but first you animals must raise the octave and stop teaching and practising the “no”/“love”/“Womb” programme. But being a “no” programmed beast now must be accepted and dealt with if your Pavlovian “idiots” that do the “nasty thing” are to continue to function “sexually.”

On occasions, in order to make-love on a given night with their wife, I have seen husbands flirt with both homosexuals and females of any age and this is enough to act as the above mentioned #2. Between flirtations little or no sex may be possible. For this problem, a stop gap remedy (other than coming to present time and becoming Real) is to have the husband practise lurid coloration (imagination such as talking dirty to his RMAA [talking dirty to himself]) or have the wife talk “dirty” or do more “lurid” or “controversial” actions to act as the required “no”s. That “no” being required to initiate the sexual “love” programme is typical. Accept this fact as part of the equation and you will *Understand* the beasts around you and your own bestiality more readily. From now on humankind’s behaviour is no mystery, for all programmes are first reframed as negatives. This is just the way the programming of 97% of humankind accomplishes every great, as well as, every mundane task. Magic can be learned and practised; this is called Acts of Will. The “no” is not just a negative or culturally unacceptable word, but rather an entire attitude or coloration that the beast must assume or shift into in order to act as *Stimulus*. The “no” or negative is merely a description of this attitude. The “no” attitude has “its” own facial expression, glint of the eye, tone of the voice, posture and breathing pattern (Duidic Celts trained as knights of the round table call this armour). Some call it “bad” or “sexy” or “evil” or “lurid.” Remember what it Really is: merely the expression of a “self” or RMAA, the suit of armour of an unReal personality within the beast that was created at the behest of bairn attendants of the person’s childhood. These can be reprogrammed or once the individual learns to demand fealty of “them,” be directed, for “each” wants to do the will of bairn attendants: actual, imagined, recalled (one’s *self* will do just fine, though). You need only replace the will of recalled attendants with your own Will (the Will of your *self*).

Otherwise the only “no” that is able to be “imagined” is one that the RMAA manufactures. In order to continue to run and re-run “love” programmes “it” has him “no” her advances, “no” her helpfulness, “no” her every interaction with him no matter how loving, concerned, and positive. Only in this way can “it” “feel” that it is trying to initiate “love” in the method of “its” programming. From then on their relationship remains sour but full of “love,” for they “no” each other “lovingly” and incessantly. This perfection of the Primary Root of evil into the Quaternary Root of evil can develop into pure “love,” which your culture calls hatred. Divorce usually follows.

In order to remedy this, while remaining a Pavlovian Pervert, one need only to manufacture “no”s to act as *Stimuli*: be lurid, talk dirty, feign anti-social practices such as adultery, pretend to flirt, etc. in ritualistic ways that both mates know and Accept for what they are. There are a lot of very good wives and husbands that have yet to become Real (when you know you are affecting an act — this is an act of Will called Gaming & since your RW(M)AA are but 1 to 2 years young, “they” are easily fooled/ *Stimulated*). Since you paid for this book I suppose that you should at least get that clitoris or penis working again. So take this advice to heart. And always remember that the end result is what matters. You may be devout church people and stalwarts in your society, but don’t hesitate to flirt, don’t be embarrassed to verbally say out loud something like, “I want to stick my cock into your juicy pussy” or “I want you to stick your hard (disgusting?) erection into me” while wearing

(affecting) the most (“no”) lurid look on your face and with the most lurid tone to your voice. Come on, you have to be convincing! If you have always done it in the dark and never hardly spoken during the act of love making, then it is time to assure that your RMAA or RWAA has the “no” it sorely needs in order to be *Stimulated* to action. Sometimes it takes very well defined “no”s to initiate your sex programme. Doing it in the company of others, or in public, perhaps. Understand that re-running programmes takes you out of Reality. Understand that you are trapped in a Castle-unConsciousness, that you live in a dream, a fantasy. So generally dream on. Doing it in public or in the company of others may work, but imagining that you are doing a “no” is just as effective as actually doing the “no,” for you are expert Dream weavers (“Womb”-ers); verbalisation of the no, Real or pretended, can be effective in fooling that “self” that has as part of “its” repertoire the sex programme. Thinking these lurid thoughts are as effective as hearing these lurid “no”s externally. The thing is sustaining the ability to *Stimulate* that “self” to begin without the props. So it is very important that you find the right symbols. While a sex therapist may get you going once or on every visit, understand why and how, then use your ability to dream (imagination or acting ability) to “self” *Stimulate*.

Of course you could learn to come into (present) Time stopping this utter nonSense, and actually feel. If you do endeavour, then colours, smells, feelings, all your Senses in fact will be heightened. The suits of armour of your “selves” are that encumbering.

Understand that monogamy and exclusionary sex or marriage is a device developed over centuries to produce high populations. Once out of the procreative state, there is no reason to conform to ancient ideas and Templar manipulations. Religions are sustained by their own invention. Social moras and norms are designed to create high populations. These “laws” of a god have nothing to do with Ascension. Your own Acceptance, thus coloration decides your Ascension. Murders, adulterers, even thieves do Ascend, and some very quickly. If you feel alright stealing to feed your children, murdering a Hitler or giving a smile to the face of a sexual partner or 40, then your grail can be filled with Holy Spirit/life-Force, thus you will Ascend. Acceptance is Spiritual Absorption. If you worry, intellectualise, emote then you are not Accepting. Guilt is a “no” programme.

Rick & Mitzy

Rick met Mitzy when he was a musician. Mitzy was married to a man that was a fraud in every way. He lacked the ability to truly love his fellow man, or so Mitzy rationalised.

Rick at this time was married to a child that was stuck in an incessant re-running of a “love” programme of talking incessantly in order to never feel alone. Of course the programme took her completely out-of-(present) Reality as do all programmes and her RWAA, as do all beast’s “selves,” had her do and say things that were “no”s in order to garnish ever more interaction from “its” personal milieu or she her *self*. Rick did as much as he could away from his wife. They rarely had sex for it turned out that his wife could not have orgasms, which is another story.

Rick often had lovers on the sly. He also flirted with every female and some males if they were that way, for to do so was a “no” to his sexual “self.” This became a pattern over many years.

Before he married his child-wife his parents had voiced the opinion that this wife to be was an idiot and that he could do better before the point of marriage took place. But once the marriage was to take place, they accepted it and loved Rick’s wife as much as they could. Rick hated to be wrong and went for years pretending it was working. And in a way it was, for he was getting sex in every place other than with his child-wife and in every imaginable way, yet that pattern was forming. To have sex he was committing adultery on a regular basis. Adultery became the “no” to *Stimulate* and initiate his sex programme.

So Mitzy became one of his prime sex partners, with whom he committed adultery. In those days every one was screwing everyone, so most people did not give it much thought, but “no” programmed beasts are addicted to “love” and so “no” everything they say and do and subsequently Rick did the Natural thing. Eventually his wife divorced him after thirteen years of marriage and he married Mitzy. All those years of sexually “loving” her, re-running a sex programme that was initiated by the “no” of adultery had set the norm. Once married to this wonderful woman, he slowly found it difficult to become *Stimulated*. There was lacking the familiar and necessary “no.” Rick found that if he could flirt at a gig with a woman then this was adulterous enough to initiate sex later on in the company of Mitzy. Later, as his Asleepness increased and the suit of armour and the armoury of the robotic-man-at-arms that did sex grew more encumbering as “it” improved his “no”-ing of everything overall, Rick discovered that he needed Mitzy present to watch his flirting and to have her comment upon this. He became older and wanted to do the right thing for he actually grew even more in “love” and in love with Mitzy. He stopped flirting for he “no”-ed even this. At that point his penis could never get erect again. Occasionally, if he got a little drunk and he allowed his RMAA to flirt, but was not too drunk to maintain his erection, he would have very wonderful sex with Mitzy. Unfortunately Rick had not an inkling of the existence of the RMAA or the Nature of the human beast. He never Real-ised how he came about having sex and what *Stimulus* was necessary to initiate sex. All those years of adultery had programmed the RMAA to perform “its” sex programme in a certain way. As he perfected this programme and all “its” other (“no”) programmes he became forever trapped in “their” collective Dream Keep.

Keith

Keith owned a van.

Keith was at a party with a group of his friends clothed in the suit of armour(y) of his S(sibling dealing)RMAA. the symbols were right: booze, cigarettes, marihuana, LSD, which are all symbols of adolescent rebellion – sort of like hiding behind the shed with close friends doing the “no” together, camaraderie of smoking.

These were all old hippies, OOPS, rather heads, for the term hippies is derogatory for it comes from a bunch of Haight Independent Proprietors (business people that sold clothes, jewellery, etc. to the heads). Hip was acceptable until these business people decided to insert imperialism into the term.

This was a Thursday, the beginning of a long holiday weekend and there was a fiddlers convention or some such outdoor Woodstock-type thing going on, and like old times they had all enlisted Keith to drive them to it with all their camping gear.

Nine o'clock at Bill's was the appointed time for pick-up.

Understand that Keith made these promises when he was animated by his SRMAA.

The next morning about eight o'clock his boss (“Daddy”) calls, which shifts Keith's SRMAA to a DRMAA or “Daddy” dealing robotic-man-at-arms on the parapet of his Castle-unConsciousness. The boss requests that he come into the store at 10 o'clock because another worker called in sick. Once shifted Keith begins to clean up his house, doing things he does when shifted into the DRMAA. He pretends he is doing the will of Daddy and does things that would please his recalled Daddy, as if Daddy will inspect later or is watching him that moment as Keith works to please him.

Nine o'clock comes and goes and no Keith to pick them up and take them down memory lane to the music festival. So, Bill calls Keith to see what's up. Keith says that there's no way he can go. Despite promises made, the trip was no go. Bill delivers the bad news to the group. Chris grabs a six pack, some jays (marihuana cigarettes) and puts on his old hitch hiking hat that Keith will remember, and gets Bill to drive him over to Keith's.

The process is simple, shift Keith from DRMAA to SRMAA. Chris is a year older. Now this may not seem relevant on the surface but Chris and Keith go back to elementary school days. The elementary school had 1st and 2nd grades in one classroom and a teacher would alternate teaching one and then the other. In those days Chris had replaced Keith's older brother, so Chris could more easily shift Keith to his “older brother” dealing RMAA as he had in school better than anyone else chosen for the task of getting Keith to resume making the camping trip.

They offered Keith beer, talked of memories, lit a few of the jays and soon Keith was back on track. He then called his boss and explained his promise and the gang waiting for him and they were on their way to the music and memories.

Shifting into Granny Mode

You are visiting Granny and you both decide that it would be fun to do something together as you did with her when you were a little child. Perhaps go to dinner and a ballet or an excursion in the woods to collect lichens, mosses, berries, etc. in order to make vapour gardens in small glass jars to enjoy throughout the winter. The date is set.

The date nears and you are with friends, sibling figures, and for the life of you, you can't imagine why you made a promise to do this thing with Granny when the big game was on that day.

While with Granny you were in the "Granny world" and while another part of you would never have made such a date on that day, it was in fact made and you grudgingly go to Granny's on schedule. Once there you shift not only programmes, but your GRMAA or Granny-dealing-robotic-man-at-arms animates you and you and Granny have the most wonderful time together doing all those things that you love doing with her. You both have a magnificent day together.

What an Asshole!

You and your co-worker are talking: two Sibling RMAA interfacing, and then in walks your boss, teacher, or any authority figure.

Your co-worker's facial expression changes, his breathing becomes anxious and he becomes rigid and serious. He may tell on someone or treat you as an alien or outsider: someone of whom he is jealous. Simply said, he becomes a Real asshole, a jerk, an alien from another planet, a zoner, a zero.

He can't help it for he is but a beast, a mere Pavlovian Pervert who is on autonomic drive. Seeing "Daddy" he shifts. His SRMAA, or Sibling dealing RMAA, is replaced by his DRMAA.

Accept his bestiality or you too will be drawn into your own Castle-unConscious and soon emote your life-Force as you:

| <i>Stimulus</i> | <i>Response</i> | <i>Reward</i> |
|-----------------|--------------------------------------|---------------|
| "no" | think to your "self" what an asshole | exude evil. |

Acceptance starts with unSeriousness or laughter. After all the co-worker is a beast animated by alternating "selves." Laugh at this co-worker's Pavlovian Perversion. Accept "its" ridiculous Nature.

The most important thing is your attitude, for it is the acquisition of a particular bent or disposition that castes you and ties you to this planet. When you can Accept everything, rather than having your buttons pushed and bestial emotings run and re-run, then and only then can you Ascend.

Being addicted to "love" is an unReal problem, or a problem of unRealness. A "no" programmed beast readily is drawn into "love." You want to "feel" "loved"/abused/put upon? You want to be "no"-ed, for then you can go to your sanctuary: "Womb?" You want to "feel" and flash emotions? These emotings are replayed attitudes, colorations that you assume much the way you would don a new piece of clothing (armour). It is true that laughter is too an emotion. An attitude of unSeriousness is the next best thing to Acceptance, as far as attitudes are concerned. If you couple this attitude of unSeriousness with maintaining, as long as possible, time spent in Reality by constantly doing, you will soon be Accepting.

The addiction to emotions is an addiction that was preconceived in your childhood. You must come to Accept that there is nothing right about emoting. Until you do so, until you allow yourself to Sense Reality, rather than relive past attitudinal programmes involving emoting, you will never Ascend.

Emoting is the opposite of Spirituality.

Sensing Reality is not possible if you are preoccupied
emoting.

To emote you must,
during *Response*,
leave Reality and venture
to "Womb."

(Like Pavlovian dogs salivating unConsciously)

You Emote.

Then, and only then does the beast return to Reality.

Soon the view of Reality is distorted by the helm,
as the beast looks for *Stimulus*: symbols rather than defines of Reality.

As the beast becomes more and more unReal, expert in creating its Dreamscapes or sanctuaries, it no longer wants or needs Reality. This is particularly true in a state that supports its dreamers and encourages their dis-function. Soon these beasts remain locked in an attitude. Their faces show it. They are mechanically unReal and inSensitive. Don't be fooled by the funeral criers (professional mourners), for these are also merely able to re-assume a familiar emotional attitude and cry. I always find it funny how inSensitive these animals can get, and how expert they become in re-running there "love" rituals.

If your holy during deep sleep (explained later in the book) guides you into the company of a boss (petty tyrant) that is always cross and constantly sarcastic, degrading, etc. and he or she enrages you or in any case makes you emote in any way, then you should stay there as a Joust and game until you Accept the situation. You begin such a Joust by gaming. Laugh at this beast and show it how silly and irrational its actions are. But more than that laugh at your “self” as it re-runs emotings.

Prisoner of Your Dream Keep

Ninety-seven percent of the humanoid population on Earth are Homo robotics. These Pavlovian Perverts are trapped in the twisted lessons of their youth. If they had been allowed to free-Associate, thus devising Real and relevant ways to exist in Reality rather than applying perverted RMAA to use old programmes to deal with new situations, or what may be worse still, having bairn attendants ‘teach’ them new tricks to please them, that may or may not be relevant, then they may not have ended up so imprisoned. Also if as children they were afforded touch-love, randomly given, rather than been compelled to earn or elicit attentions then, this attention getting would not have developed as the driving force in their lives; instead they would have room in their lives for Real curiosity.

If they had never been required to distort Reality into Dream Keeps they would have remained Real/Sensual. Unfortunately, in order to sense someone such as a surrogate bairn attendant with the familiarity of youth, one must have RMAA particularly adept at visual as well as audial distortion and selective sensory deprivation and good at hallucination (armour).

What does this all mean? It means that if a Homo robotics’ father did not give him random (unearned) touch-love and out of neglect inadvertently required him to do “no”s to elicit attention, then any male can easily be hallucinated into the role of a “Daddy,” and in the twisted perception of that Homo robotics trained in this way, he must interact with all males that are authority figures in this way.

There once lived a girl named Kitty who was raised by normally Asleep Homo robotics. The father worked as a medical lab technician and only gave any of his children attention in the form of “reprimand-word-touch-love.” Usually this transpired at breakfast but sometimes it was carried on at dinner as well. He gave them the traditional peck on the cheek before bed, but other than that he never hugged or spoke with them unless it was to reprimand them. This is common in every human culture on Earth. Parents raised as “no” programmed beasts feel that “no”-ing is normal and “loving.” For many of these Pavlovian Perverts inflicting pain, fear and suffering upon others is right and good. These have invented wrathful gods; imagining that such perverted actions are spiritual, necessary and part of their god’s good works. “Beat the love of God into her.”

Kitty graduated from college and began living with this artist who had been hugged a lot by his parent’s randomly, so he was not into earning attention by doing the negative. He did on occasion enter a TRANCE and maim himself, however. Other than his having been trained in the Secondary Root of evil, Paxton was a loving and wonderfully sincere being. He did not want big deals nor did he want fireworks. Paxton wanted Real love/Acceptance, for that is what he offered Kitty.

Kitty on the other hand was use to eliciting attention from a “Dad” by doing something wrong. In college she was neglecting her studies in order to elicit “love” from her parents and guilt from her “self.” Self guilt as a programme involves “*self*-reprimand-word-touch-love.” On campus she was known as a bitch for her robotic-women-at-arms were re-enacting “love” programmes and trying to concerte her personal environment to “love” her the way her parents had for years. These RWAA had to settle for a friend that she could share her “stupidity” with and who could be manoeuvred into being “Mommy.” Also, so as to correct the situation of having no “loving” parents around, Kitty had created a programme of “lack of discipline,” so by not doing her work, her parents, who had her call them every night to see how she was coming in her studies, could reprimand her “lovingly” over the phone. I often heard her relating stories that portrayed her as an idiot and an antagonist over the phone. Her RWAA did this so as to elicit and extent this period of “word and reprimand-word-touch-love.” There would be these long phone conversations all because Kitty had elicited them. Who in their right mind would entice others to brow beat them? Who would normally have done these stupid and antagonistic things to others. The term pervert comes to mind, Pavlovian Pervert. But this is “love”: daughter does, says, suggests the negative, which elicits Mommy or Daddy to “reprimand-word-touch-love” her. Ain’t “love” grand?

In case you are wondering I was her roommate at college. I was seeing a guy name of Radcliffe who was also a void student. Kitty was in “love” with him because he always gave her hell verbally, which was what

she missed by being away from home. Radcliffe's cousin was this fellow Paxton, and Paxton being reclusive and shy was so horny that he would have screwed a gorilla if it had been a female. So Radcliffe introduced Kitty to Paxton. Kitty and Paxton lived together for a time. Paxton was Accepting/truly loving, but that was not Kitty's DRWAA's idea of "love," so this did not last very long. Every time Radcliffe would visit Paxton for dinner he would "love" Kitty. Kitty would tell him something she did that was stupid and then he would be obliging and fulfil her need for "love" in the form of "reprimand-word-touch-love."

I recall a very popular TV show she liked, which was indicative of her kind and the accepted art forms of Homo robotics. It involved this puppet from outer space that was adopted by an American family. The space creature was a sarcastic pervert. Kitty "loved" this show and Radcliffe always pointed out how perverted it was. Kitty "loved" Radcliffe in the worse way. Kitty was still living at Paxton's at this stage, but was not sleeping with Paxton, for she could not concerte him to "love" her the way her father had. No matter how stupid or how abusive or how many things Kitty wrecked, he always Accepted her. Her DRWAA was out of "love" with Paxton. When Radcliffe would come over she would pine. And when he "loved" her she would be driven out of the room and into her room to *Respond* in the Dream Keep of her bedroom. There she would re-run her DRWAA's self-pity programmes. These were the same ones she normally re-ran when her father would "no" her in his "loving" way in her childhood. This made her obsessive "love" for Radcliffe ever greater. She expected there to be reconciliation's but there were none. Radcliffe just wanted Kitty out of there so Paxton could find another woman, someone Real enough to love him as much as he loved her. Eventually Kitty got the message and moved in with someone willing to "love" her in the way she had been "loved" by her father throughout her youth.

It is very difficult for a person to leave home that becomes so addicted to certain "love" programmes and patterns of attention elicitation without feeling un-"loved." With Homo robotics "love" continues to be sought, and bairnhood attendants are imagined or hallucinated out of the personal environment in which these perverts find themselves living. People like Paxton become their victims and often their fatalities. That was not the situation in this case for Radcliffe drove Kitty out after his study was over. Paxton eventually married a loving woman that knew Paxton's value. It is so hard to find humanoids that truly love others. For the most part they are merely trying desperately to re-enact the "loving" situations of their youth, redundantly.

With Each

Each time you, Homo robotics, do a task, "it" first sees a symbol, a *Stimulus* that WHAM!, calls forth a specific robotic-man-at-arms to the parapet of the Castle-unConsciousness. In other words "it" rules your body, you go Asleep, you go on autonomics, you go out-of-(present) Reality. This is fine. This is how higher beings function, otherwise you'd have to learn to walk dinosaur style for a long time. And you know what happened to them.

Specialisation in industry requires very little attention be paid to Reality. This is as life has evolved. A person can survive well without ever awakening to Reality. On the assembly line a person does a simple set of dexterities and can usually continue a fantasy continually while doing these tasks or acts of "love."

Every task that RMAA do are "love" acts. They are each coloured sublimely "no," this sends the person to "Womb," a dream state, they autonomically *Respond*, this may or may not be practical but it will be thought by that RMAA to be attention getting and then it flashes an emotion as *Reward*. Homo robotics is then Real long enough to sift Reality for another *Stimulus* and WHAM!, it is again out-to-lunch, out-of-(present) Time/ returned to "Womb"/ trapped in the Dream Keep for ever under the spell of their (women or) men-at-arms.

Circumstance can require that you disrupt your dream states, yet many cannot and perish in a life threatening situation such as when a knife is thrust at them or a machine falters.

It is significant, and you will discover as you lay siege your Dream Keep, that each programme is a re-run and that a RMAA in the course of doing three programmes in succession may go from a programme

devised when it was three and a half, to a programme devised when it was thirteen, then back to one devised at one year young.

Also understand that for each programme the specific RMAA's suit of armour(y) changes: its appearance to others, its weapons (armoury) or attention-getting-devices: such as how low it talks, how pleasing or abrasively it talks or perhaps how inaudibly it talks, as well as its posture, breathing patterns, values, beliefs, facial expression, etc. These are all acts, programmes an "it" uses. If one is ineffective "it" will shift into another.

Perceptually you actually become the age of that child that devised that programme at the time it was devised until that programme is completed by the flashing of *Reward*. If you are required to learn a new programme of dexterity: mental, physical or emotional, or a combination of these, generally one of your newer or latest formulated RMAAic programmes (suit of armour(y) configurations are donned) are used to do these tasks, which adds to "its" encumbrances.

Let's say you discover a new food. If it is like x, for that is how the beast works: nothing is new, it is always like an earlier experience, then it is added into the suit of armour(y) that is already very numbing and very huge and unwieldy. inSensitive. The armour is a filter and autonomic distorter making everything look familiar, while within the armoury programmes are stored.

To eat a new food, let's say a taco then it will sit as part of the experience of eating A on 17 days after birth, and B two months and a day after birth, and t on 27th day after birth, which is like t, b, a and after tons of associations, interactions with bairn attendants and emotings (recalled, re-run, relived, etc.) such as the chain may involve being forced to eat asparagus and all the emotional nonsense that you went through to eat that, that by the time you get to taco it is actually tasteless (except for the spices that induce well-being chemically). Well, it's hot like when I got some of that curry in India with my sister and we ran to the Water Man and it cost more for water that day than I spend for candy in a week, and it has the texture of those crispy crackers they gave us at that Methodist church in Alaska when I visited Robert Hall, and the lettuce, well lettuce is like eating grass when I was left on the ground in the yard as a baby.

All this in computer language is done in a mode called "@ echo off" which means that all these commands, date flashing, emotings, facial expression, audial expressions, eye and body movements are all recalled but not presently expressed, for if they were then you would look like a jumping bean twitching and moving around crazily.

Certain drugs can induce this; can make the programmes run @ echo (on).

Regardless the beast still flashes all these switches and past experiences when it makes this line of associations as it does an autonomic act. The displeasure's, the ecstasies, etc. are all there, but because the beast is "no" programmed it looks primarily for "no"s, and as it lives longer than many animals it has time to perfect its robotis. This as you can see, encumbers the computer and thus numbs it and makes experiencing new things not new at all.

Sex for instance is an add-on so most people hardly feel having sex, and some don't feel it at all.

Generally, it is as are most "love" programmes initiated by the "no," then the beast slips into "Womb" (out-of-[present] Time) and that RMAA merely relives an old programme. If you first masturbated then that is where you go. Watch your sex partner as it closes its eyes and remembers, relives that first orgasm, again (not with you, but rather in re-memory). Just as there are correct ways to do a job or a task, there is also a Real/Accepting/Sensitive and Sensual way to have sex, but leaving Reality is not it.

Hilariously, I know this guy who married the nicest girl but unfortunately for them her first orgasm had come after her father tied her to a bed and raped her. I say unfortunately, because he must re-enact the entire ritual for her to "enjoy" the re-experiencing. Her eyes roll up into her head and there she is when she orgasms... so many years into her past. Yes, Homo robotics can mate for life if it is restrained from any sexual Reality until they both have sex with one another, then they relive that initial sexual experience for ever after, no matter who they later have sex with, for they will always go to the same place/time whenever they do-it. Sounds boring though. And it seems a counter measure towards learning Acceptance of love from everyone: universal love.

Real people, Homo sapiens, that never are forced to learn “Womb”-ing or dreaming and never learn/are taught to “no” nor the “love” programme; learn from each experience, absorb each experience in Real Time, rather than merely adding to “their” encumbrances.

Each programme that Homo robotics plays back goes all the way back to “Womb,” which is to say all programmes are done while the beast’s awareness is in the dungeon of its Castle-unConsciousness. This is why Homo robotics has so little memory of its own daily activities. This is also the reason I am being so repetitive. Otherwise one day from tomorrow you will have forgotten what I have told you about your Nature.

If you can free your true-self and make your *self*⁴, ruler of your body you will be able to SENSE, to ABSORB FORCE.

As your RMAA were formulated for and by each bairn attendant your true-self was forced into protective custody in your Dream Keep and there it remains. You can only experience what you are allowed to sense after the experience travels through the armour of one of your men-at-arms. So nothing new arrives to that self, so it remains a mere child, undeveloped, scared, atrophied.

The entire function of enter Champion is to stop the RMAA and open up a path of sight, sound, feel, smell, taste, and sensing of Reality: an Access Point for the true-self (a safe husk of perfect Lancelot armour). By denying “them” “their” games, “their” helmet, “their” suit of armour(y); the self or spirit of the body (the grail) can peer out at Reality for the first time in years.

This is your mission to regain your ability to Sense/Absorb so that you can collect sufficient FORCE to Ascend.

Many students suggest that fantasy of *self* is positive escape, that the *Stimulus* used is positive for most such fantasies are positive ones, with the exceptions of those coming from a bent or perverted beast where they indulge one of their “self”’s insanity. When *self* leaves Reality (via a “self”) and fantasises, no matter how positive and beautiful the fantasy may be; it results in not Accepting what it has and where it is in (present) Time, rather the *self* escapes and emotes, exuding precious life- Force. Before “it” fantasises (in “Womb”) “it” remained on guard duty in a state of apprehension/stress/desire (fear and Loathing). Yet the escape of *self* in fantasy is significant. Fear and Loathing is focusing. This is called envisionment. It is a very important aspect of human Magical ability.

⁴ *Self* refers the part of you that talks to its “selves”

Protrusions

This is not Really so much about protrusions, but I find human's obsessiveness hilarious. Obsessiveness is sort of Will used in the wrong direction. However, it is Will and indicates to teachers and most importantly to yourself for that matter, just what your potential is and remains. Those things you have concentrated upon: perfecting a video game, going after a potential spouse or sexual partner are indicative of your potential and should be Accepted by you as very important. When a beast is "no" programmed, then all its acts are re-enactments of familiar and well rehearsed "love" programmes. A thing as simple as creating a better mouse trap or as complex as creating a missile with the ability to carry a payload of destructiveness towards a comet are both accomplished with "love," which is to say that in order to enter the TRANCE state of intellectuality the beast first defines a "no" or problem, for then it is a "love" act. In one case the problem may be Real, such as trying to catch a mouse. In the case of the missile being devised the problem may be hypothetical (but not for long!). Once a "no" or *Stimulus* is devised, then *Response* or a TRANCE state is entered. The person may remain in this state for hours (fear and loathing – intellectualism) devising a weapon or tool. Up to a point this endeavour is enTRANCEment, but recall that "selves" are but children. Attention deficit disorder. Children. By you extending the envelope of concentration via Will, you are ruling your RW(M)AA. So it can be done in regard to everything.

In much the same way a beast whose culture defines procreative maturity as valuable and in terms of the size of certain protrusions: breasts in the case of female man and the penis in the case of male man, this obsession coupled with the "no"/"love" programme developed to the point of the Tertiary Root of evil or even to the point of the Cinquenary leads this smart, over intellectual beast to "no" or "love" the size or shape or configuration of their perspective protrusions. Since "love" is Accessed most effectively from surrogate, imagined or recalled bairn attendants via a "no," likewise protrusions are obsessed about in this same way: "(no) How do(es) my protrusion(s) look?" or "How do they feel. Taken through the same development of many cases of self maiming in order to elicit attention from surrogate bairn attendants who are imagined or recalled as a personality within the beast tries to re-run a "love" programme in which "it" was rewarded for hurting itself. These protrusions strategically are maimed by the way a person sleeps on them, feeds their body (lack of proper nutrients), handles them, etceteras. If these protrusions weren't so bloody important, or if the beast had never been "no" programmed, these protrusions would not Realise such abuse to the point that they develop cancers. Stomach problems and all (not most) other problems stem from just such "loving" programming or obsessions. Stop "love" and the re-running of these "love" programmes, and healing can begin, Reality will flood in upon your being.

All a person need do is STOP "no"-ing. This involves paying attention, being Aware of what surrounds her or him. The reasons groups are most effective is simply that a person tends to fall Asleep seconds after trying to be Aware. The group membership can remind one another to BE HERE NOW. Try to look at a picture for twenty minutes without going out of focus or fantasising. Most Homo robotics can't do this for three minutes straight, let alone for two hours. During acts of Will (jousting together) Reality/GOD/the FORCE floods in and is made Accessible by Will. Beasts are obsessive yes, and some of their "love" programmes may be helpful to themselves and to society, but this is random, so to speak (actually it is not, for coloration or what you call karma has made for the individual and those affected by the individual a learning environment).

If you find that you have an ailment, Accessing FORCE can remedy the personal ailment in all cases. All cases. Extending your time in Time/Reality, which denies your RMAA "their" "love" games, is the simple answer.

Stop worrying about your protrusions. Stop "no"-ing in order to do every task you do, instead game. A student of mine will typically, during group tasks, imagine that what it does, it does for a bairn attendant. They work hard, impatiently. Recall that impatience is a learned emotional state, which is translated in the RMAA's physical aspect by the individual thus imprisoned, running around, often as not, winded while doing a simple task. Ask these sleep walkers a question and they must come out of their TRANCE to re-orient their "selves" to

re-run yet another “love” programme to please you, or in the point of perception of the RMAA that is called forth to man the Walls of their Dream Keep, “its” bairn attendant. Often I have stopped such a beastly student and said that she or he is sound Asleep. Then I send them to game, after first jousting in order to re-Access Reality.

“The difference in the way I do a task and the way you do it is very great. You are enTRANCED: you enter “no” or fear-and-loathing, in other words you snarl at the thing, tense up, using far more force than is needed to perform the task, most of which is being exuded as evil, for your Asleepness is so well developed that you emote as you re-run this “love” programme (put on this performance of your RMAA that now motivates you). You are shooting life-Force all over the place. And besides you are going to grind your teeth down to nothing, all for “love.” On the other hand I do not do a thing for “love.” The way I Do is simple, I game. Like a child I approach the task I randomly have chosen to perform (rather than colouring it as a “no” and re-running a “love” performance as you do). I game. I look it over, I get to know the thing. My emotional state isn’t, for I Accept/love the object. In your case you might try smiling and humming like school children do in performing a task or game, which is one in the same. And then go about doing the task, playing the game. There is no hurry when you play. Impatience is part of one of your RMAAic performances, as is the state of fear-and-loathing I watch you enter with every task you perform. Recall that the “no”/“love” programme, the Primary Root of evil was taught you before you could walk or stand, so even the act of standing or walking is a “love” programme: a performance conducted for some bairn attendant. To please a bairn attendant. Butt (pointing to my butt), no, but... (getting a person to laugh opens their façade - puts gaping holes in their Dream Keep’s Walls). Each of the performances were once done, once devised by you in some other time. Once you were petted or that familiar emoting was displayed by a bairn attendant, that device too became part of the repertoire or armoury of the specific RMAA that learned to deal with that specific bairn attendant. Follow me? Recall after Jousting for two or three hours you find yourself childlike. As you walk you are walking with the use of your simplified RMAA that know that specific performance or programme. (I look right at his eyes and I say,) Joust. Where you are as you walk or even stand, is NOW. You are in Reality after Jousting. You are one with the very same part of you that devised standing and walking. This is just a shell covering your true-self, the grail (spirit/force) of your physical body. It too wants your attention, wants love, Real love. It is sensual and wants to absorb FORCE. This the RMAA have disallowed. By remaining in Reality, by extending your stay in Time/Space, your undeveloped grail can mature and learn to Absorb. Be a child, pay attention to the simple action of standing and walking, but particularly remain Aware of your breathing pattern. Become one with your self, be a quiet absorbing child. The emotional state isn’t, but it can be described to beasts like yourself in bestial terms, terms of emotions by saying that the self is in a state of wonder, and awe. This is Accessing the FORCE/GOD.”

Now you know why you should quit worrying about your silly protrusions. There is Ascension. There is life after breast enlargement surgery, and even without it.

One other piece of knowledge. Initially you will need to perform Formalised Jousting as outlined in this book for hours on end before you can Access Reality. The periods will slowly shorten until you can assume the state of Accessing instantaneously as part of enter Champion. Perhaps one day you will decide to remain Real and live (in) IT.

Sam

Sam is a fun guy. Sam grew up as an only child. Such upbringing creates a very polar person. When I say polar, I am referring to the fact that having only one or two bairn attendants, such an offspring generally assumes, what your culture calls, the neuroses of its parents. Polar people have for instance the values that are either identical or the exact opposite of those that raise them. These are alternated in the armoury of the specific “self” as it devises attention eliciting programmes: each RMAA that an Homo robotics devises associates identical and opposite defines to its suit of armour(y). Sometimes an arm or weapon uses being bad to get attentio, other times “it” USES being good and agreeable to get attention. Each time that RMAA that expresses that counter value or re-runs opposing programmes, these being “no”s, “it” emotes, as *Reward*.

In Sam’s case his father really had nothing to do with Sam until much later in Sam’s life. His mother was a much younger person than her husband, so the boy was her toy, her responsibility, of which Sam’s father had absolutely no contact whatsoever until he was about five and well able to talk intelligibly, and get around well enough on his own two feet to find his father, for his father kept to himself in his study or out of the house. Even meals were taken separately until the boy had learned his table manners. This is the same way wealthy people who can afford a governess and teachers often have their offspring trained: their governess becomes their child’s sole programmer. These products generally have one personality that predominates, who has the mirrored bent of their trainer’s programming and ideas, so are simplistic and very Wilful or obsessive. I have heard people referring to these as old souls. Because they never had to adapt to a varied personal environment these polar beings are well ingrained with a few values, well versed in what they believe and what they like or dislike. If such a child has an anti-social or self destructive process, having no other RMAA, or these having been much later devised that they are subordinate to this major and earlier one, it will be very difficult to change, for the polar being has no other experience, no other values, no other RMAA to be called forth to man the Walls of their Castle-unConsciousness.

Note: This is why a marriage for procreative purposes should be between sixteen adults. Broods should be produced together and breast feeding and contact should be random and varied, unless a child specifically indicates a preference for a specific person’s breast and attention. Understand that learning is for both child and those in the child’s environment. This is Schoolhouse Eorthe Plane.

Whereas a person that was raised by let’s say an older sister, father and Aunt, as well as a mother from the time of birth, had to, if it was forced to learn dreaming/ escape while in the womb, devise a number of robotic-men (or woman)-at-arms who please by devising armour(y) to deal with each bairnhood attendant. Having a more diversified repertoire and more “selves” to be autonomically called forth, these animals are seemingly more complex (confused). To reprogramme “these” may be very difficult for “these” can incessantly swim the moat of their Dream Keep: if a reprogrammer (psychiatrist) corners one RMAA the animal merely shifts from doing the crawl by using RMAA # 5, to doing the butterfly by # 2 RMAA, then doing the breast stroke by # 4 RMAA. Such beasts can never be cornered and reprogrammed by outside trainers except by use of the club, whip or any device that works on the Primary aspect of any animal: the Physical. To deal with such complex beasts the individual must first learn what calls forth the specific RMAA that it wants to change. Then prayer and beseeching or Keep Talk is used. Generally present day theorists encourage such a person not to de- or reprogramme themselves but rather to learn how to keep the less abrasive and anti-social RMAA resident yet under control by its indulgence in posture, breathing, talking, values, rituals, attitude, etc.

On the other hand the more polar a person is the easier it is to deal with, for it is very regular, simplistic and definitive. Sam for instance is fun to go travelling with and camping. He knows what he wants and that is to play. Children love his simplicity, for he plays even at his ripe old age of fifty something. Unfortunately potential wives misinterpret this, for they imagine that he would make a wonderful father for their offspring, but Sam is far too selfish to want children and he knows this. Sam is so ingrained in his values that he understands that children are a lot of work and expense, so rationally he chooses not to have any, which has left him with no one to love him. For the sort that would be his surrogate mother and alternate visiting playmate is the type that

would want to nurture him and their own children. Whereas the fly by slut that is into pure sexual and substance hedonism isn't the type that would fancy Sam. Ridiculously Sam is his worse enemy. He is trapped in a sort of Catch-22 situation. Consequently he can never find what he seeks regarding a spouse. Sam is a little child, well defined. I like this because I know what to expect from the beast. Most beasts are so complex and unstable; they will do all sorts of things. One moment they hate something, then a symbol comes along, which induces a different RMAA to appear with its unique set of values and all of a sudden the beast likes the very thing its other personality hated. Extremes. Programmes that end in the flashing of emotions/ emoting/ exudation of evil. Sam has a well defined repertoire and even when one or two things that he does seem obtuse, it is fine, because they are definitive and things you can count on him to do, feel, say, think, want. Regarding spouses of polar beings, while Sam and most male products of a single female bairnhood attendant are looking for surrogates of these female attendants, female children too are looking for female surrogates, despite the programmed values these may have been afforded them by these attendants such as valuing the love of a husband or man that the female attendant may have incessantly associated with them.

Like the male, the female polar being wants to relive the personal environment of her bairnhood. The sexual part of this may be discovered as a by-product in seeking a similar companion (female), or these may have happened upon a sexual feeling while being a bairn and in the company of this (exclusively) female attendant. As unReal as such a situation is, if the attendant of this bairn wants her to be heterosexual, then it would be helpful for this same sex single attendant to know the likelihood of homosexuality to be Real. It would be much better though to have raised her in a brood and in a tribe allowing her to free associate sex as she would be allowed to free associate any experience and devise her own programmes, choose her own preference. Such self devised programmes are short and so very practical ones, generally, for it is emotionalism and programmes that are tact onto existing programmes making them long and cumbersome. If those original programmes that the new ones are tact onto are "no" programmes of a RMAA, then those unReal pathways must be energised in order to re-run the newer programmes.

If a person that is polar is a serial killer or thief or has some sort of mis-programming, then it is polarised to do this simple one "love" act or re-enactment over and over. If a person is not polar, to become good at serial killing or making money or cheating people or building cabinets, it must polarise, focus only on the symbology that Keeps the RMAA, that RMAA that knows the programme, resident. This is called discipline. It can also be called obsessiveness or compulsion, if it is a programme of an undesirable or anti social or anti-survivalistic type performed autonomically and unConsciously.

Children left alone, particularly "no" programmed beasts, are left to their own devices that readily become vices, will perfect "love." Interactions with people, even mothers at home, require the individual to remain to a greater extent in present time than when they are left to elicit attention for "their" *self*.

Whenever I have dealings with Sam I know what to expect. I Understand and Accept his nature, the nature of his bestiality. I know what he will do and what he won't do. He is "no" programmed, yet he was allowed to free associate far more than most children. His dextrous programming is very Real and so practical. Interestingly he does understand the humour of his fellow beasts: their "love" of pain and controversy, paradox and confusion. He is a dreamer, but he is not incessantly re-running externally "no"s. He knows how to entertain himself. He is inordinately organised and set in his ways. His house is like a dusty mishmash of necessary items, not unlike toys in a playroom. Sam knows where everything belongs and feels a value for everything that he owns. He respects each and loves it as a tool, but also as a toy, for he knows how to play. He can tell you the worth of any object in relationship to himself. Most beasts own but don't know why nor do they hold value in terms of practical necessity those objects that they consider their property. Sam is intimate with all that he owns. Sam and many polar beings Understand how mechanical things work, how check books are balanced and how valuable a relationship is by what they get out of it, both relationships with things and with people.

Polar beings will only become part of a social, economic or political group if it affords them ease and more freedom. All friendships are practical access of something. If a polar being is mis-programmed then the relationship must feed this illusion. The analogy of the Castle-unConsciousness vs. the Tribal-Consciousness is

to show the difference between a polar being and a person raised in a diversified personal environment. If you are contemplating marriage to a single spouse, rather than marrying a Tribe, look for a polar being that was not abused in childhood.

Some advice: after procreating it would be best to avoid penal penetrative sex during foetal development, stick to oral sex or very calm masturbation, if you must. Eliminating sex altogether during pregnancy works, too. But massage and a lot of holding and touching is very helpful. Even if the pregnant person is bestial, every instance of touch and hugging short circuits any “love” programme. Once born, allow the child to free associate as much as possible and avoid programming it with the Primary and Secondary Roots of evil.

Imaginings

Sensing what is not actually there in present Time is typical of a beast motivated by “love” and expert at hallucination. A person’s RMAA tends to see and hear what “it” needs to see and hear in order to live in a familiar Dreamscape. A manager pretends to see and hear a “no” to work up a *Response* and then emote. A worker may pretend to be stupid so that he can emote after his hallucinated father figure has “reprimand-word-touch-loved” him. A drunk will remain a drunk as long as such an activity elicits attention. Others may “no” her, or the drunk may “no” itself “lovingly.” A Pavlovian Pervert (beast’s number is Four) doesn’t practise Choice, rather it re-runs programmes: Pavlovian *Responses*. Human’s number is Five- the number of the Nomad, adaptability, freedom, choice, but whether the person practices Choice decides whether it becomes an Homo sapiens or remains an Homo robotics.

If living in a dreamscape is where you are trapped, then volition is illusory. The dreamer’s values, desires and hallucinated separate reality is esoteric. Motivated by a childish personality that wants, so does hear, see and sense that which makes “it” comfortable, regardless whether it is Real or not.

The lonely shopper that eaves drops upon two friends and overhearing their conversation imagines that their conversation is about herself, when it is not. Or perhaps you have always practised putting down others, breaking the 9th Commandment incessantly during coffee breaks or group conversations as a natural and normal activity and after days and weeks of these conversations, you come to believe the imaginings that you voiced about those of whom you gossiped to the point that upon mention of these ‘victims’ to people who Actually know them, that they think you quite mad or swear that you must be talking about some other person. The desire for “love” is so very powerful that you may do and say amazingly absurd things. Here is a typical situation about someone I call Nancy.

Nancy was now living alone. Things had deteriorated. Actually she had slowly perfected a life where she was forced to remain deep in the “no” of worry, the “no” of dissatisfaction. It was “no”-ing that became her addiction and the emoting that resulted from her “no”-ing. In her loneliness she eventually only had herself to talk to, herself to “no.” Originally such beasts are trained by their trainers (bairn attendants) that crawling towards the negative is a sure attention getter. As their dexterity grows these trainers give them less and less attention, so these animals devise other patterns of activity, other attention eliciting programmes based upon the original one: if I crawl towards the negative, I will be touch-loved (a womb-like experience).

Well, Nancy’s perfection of doing the negative eventually led her to isolation, for her activities, thoughts, all were “no”s in relationship to her personal environment. She had no conviction, for she was an evil puppet on strings, a fool for “love.” (evil and evil people are unConscious – that is their problem and the problem on your planet) If the person liked blue, she would “no” this and voice her Grande Opinion at how stupid blue was, and how only people that liked green were cool and worth knowing. She craved “word, eye, reprimand and conflict-touch-love” so she would listen and collect all the Grande Opinion and rhetoric of the lover of blue and then take the stance of being a lover of blue in the occasion that she ran into someone that liked green. Her motivation was not based on any real conviction about liking a colour or of any opinion, but it was plain that she was addicted to and so craved “word, eye, reprimand and conflict-touch-love.” She had devised and sophisticated her Primary Root of evil programme for the extended elicitation of symbolic womb or “touch-love.” Her only conviction, I mean addiction, was ‘how can I elicit attention?’ She had been trained and she perfected her training. This perfection was alienating, and made her ever more lonely. Yet each programme was run to completion. Each programme was re-run out-of-(present) Time/ Reality, so she could never remember what she had done. She may have developed into a serial killer or a rapist. Fortunately she did not, but the mechanism is the same. Forgive them, they know not what they do, for they are but Pavlovian Perverts perfecting that which they were trained to do in order to ‘feel’ “loved”/ “Wombed:” Why crawling toward the negative, of course.

One day she was invited to a family get together. She had just come from a cocktail party and was quite drunk. From the time she walked in the door until she left the house, the entire time spent was in pouting. First

with the greetings. She walked into the house in the company of a long lost friend of the family. They always saw Nancy, but this friend had not been seen in 2 or three decades. She made the remark to me, "You'd think she was Jesus Christ. Just ignore me."

Next her sister Jan had voiced the opinion that she preferred Bluefish. That is how many Eastern Shoremen feel, because the Blue is so very strong and the Rock is so often exported and so more expensive, that Bluefish becomes more the staple for poor people, so culturally the palate thus develops as a result of economic factors. Well, Nancy said she preferred Rockfish and her Father said, "Many people do." And then her sister Jan proceeded to tell a funny story.

"I was over Cousin Jane's one summer after she inherited the old family home. It was a colonial made of British bricks. America has Dutch bricks, a Dutch road systems and a Dutch money system, for the Dutch signified rebellion and was in vogue in the American colonies." Jan was a great story teller. "That's why Oxford was originally called Williamstad, a Dutch version of King William. It should have been Willemstad if it had been actual Dutch. So I stay there at Jane's all summer helping her put the house right. We had a great time! First day I go to the fishmonger and get these beautiful Blues. I broil it up and serve it with a good red, for it is that strong." Her Father agreed, "always a Red." Jan proceeded, "And Cousin Jane said she preferred Rockfish. The thing was that she hadn't any money and I was paying for all the supplies, and everyone knows how Jane hated to cook." There was agreement all around on this fact.

Apparently from conversations Jane had been an only child and never much liked to do any domestic chores. As a child she would disappear and do a piece of art or hide when work was to be accomplished.

Jan went on, "So we had Bluefish a lot, in fact whenever we had fish it was always Blue and I always cooked it." Well the end of the summer came and it was time to go south on our boat so the last dinner was fish as were most dinners, and I could only find Rockfish, so we had that." "Get a load of this!" Jane made the comment, 'What is with this fish, it is tasteless.' Everyone laughed but Nancy, she took offence to this saying, "everyone does not have to like Bluefish, I happen to like Rock. Why are you all being so nasty?" But this was mostly drowned out by opinions about different people's tastes for different meats. Meats to Eastern Shore Watermen refer to fish. Red meat are all other flesh and these usually are referred specifically as venison and the like. Pork, beef and such fare are often disdained as odd tasting and undesirable fare. We use to have fish breakfast, lunch and dinner. It is a cultural thing. Fish don't need to be herded or tended. Watermen are lazy, we get our food out of the Chesapeake Bay.

However, I noted Nancy's incessant critical and continuing sour disposition. I went over to talk to her and she was negative, negative, negative. No matter how I tried to get a nice word out of her, it would not come. Everyone noticed this and soon merely excluded her from all conversation. She would take every comment or suggestion and pervert it and hallucinate it to be judgmental. When it came time to be seated for dinner, her Father suggested where she should sit and Nancy went ballistic over this authority, as she 'saw' it. So her sister stepped in and said, "You have been a bitch since you walked through that door (pointing in the direction of the front of the house), so why don't you just walk out of it and leave the rest of us to have our fun. We are trying to have a good time." Nancy stormed out after saying, "ye, fun at my expense!"

Nancy took everything said as though it was for her and about her alone. She imagined that every story and every comment was directed at her in order to belittle her. It takes a very lonely person to perceive such a world. And it takes a twisted person with a twisted pattern or armoury of twisted attention eliciting programmes to do this. She wanted to be belittled for it was a comforting "love" loop. She would drink and mope for hours about how awfully they treated her, when actually they did not really care so much about her as they did care about entertaining the guests and the group with funny stories, that were not about her but about hilarious occurrences.

Pride and ego are enTrancing. I always instruct students to do the unusual, that which, in your vernacular, seems unNatural. This strategy helps to demand fealty of your RMAA. If you feel embarrassed over something, then do that something until it balances and you Accept it. Quite often, if this strange action (re-enactment) is done enough and holds a strong charge it will induce a strong change in you as your entire grain Realises balance and Understanding. I often demand that a male whose RMAA pretends to be macho dress and

act effeminately. For instance I might demand a female whose predominant RWAA has her act dykish, instead act overly feminine, dressing in very flimsy and alluring costumes and being overly soft spoken and flirtatious with men for days and even weeks on end. Such acts are Acts of Will, formalised jousts, of affectation. You must Understand that the beasts around you are all just that, Pavlovian Perverts, whose values are mimickings, they are doing the will of recalled bairnhood attendants. Those who are especially proud I instruct to return home and carry on these jousts of paradox so as to lose their “self” importance. Interestingly enough those people that are homosexual or are pretending to be so often are thus due to occurrences in this life or (clorations) charges attached to their holy in previous lives. By extended denial of there nature or naturalness they experience recollections that re-balance their being. Students such as these are instructed to have sex with those of the opposite sex and to be witnessed. Witnessing is of utmost importance. Yes, the traditional two witnesses, preferably a female and male human or man should be the makeup of the witnesses. More the merrier, though.

I wish to stress the point here that it is good and normal for males to touch and hug males as it is also healthy for females to hug and hold females. I often have everyone get honest and Real (nude) and hug, and actually go overboard with this a bit, and fondle each other’s genitals, only because the culture has gone so far from the norm that members, if they hope to return to balance, must do this particular paradox. Understand that in order that your specie survived the periodicity of this planet that it had to be manipulated. The institution of marriage of procreative couples and clothing the body were both used to increase the practising of sexual intercourse, which was fine and necessary for mere beasts-of-the-field. Sexuality, on a planet strangled by too many people, must be returned to normalcy, though. Nudity and open and Accepting attitudes towards the practising of sexual Sensitivity/ Sexual Acceptance/ Sexual Love/ Sexually induced Sensitivity or Absorption must take place and be allowed to take place. Sensing/ Absorption is why a holy joins with a grail. Without Knowledge and expertise in Accepting life-Force none of you can Ascend. God, the expanding universe, is not going to tolerate this. You have more people than ever before on this planet, yet you are Ascending less souls than any previous time since Lucifer’s ordering and manipulation of your present specie and your present home.

Acceptance must be universal: of your personal situation, of the people around you, of your “selves.” Your complexity has enabled your technology to grow to the present point. You are now able to survive the periodicity of your adopted planet. Real love is Acceptance. You have so many terms for the same things. Your complexity has turned into perplexity, which is why I have woven so much sheer crap and utter nonsense out of utter simplicity, for God/ the Force is the simplest of all things: the ONE LAW.

Recall that you were taught that emotions are wonderful, for they accompanied the *Reward* of touch-love, thus your addiction. There you were crawling on the floor after sitting endlessly in the crib. Not only *Rewarded* with touch for crawling toward the negative, but also excitedly and emotionally grabbed and jostled with exuberance. Part and parcel of the “touch”/“no”/“love”/“Womb”-ing programme is emotionalism. Often times it was the exudation of negatively clouded lif-Force.

You have physical love, emotional love, paternal love, maternal love, sexual love, etc., etc. Actually there is only love. If you become emotional, emote, then you are Asleep, surrounded by the Walls of your Castle-unConsciousness you keep Reality at bay. Any interaction that induces emoting on your part (involuntary) must be repeated until you Understand and Accept it: until you can control “it,” thus demanding fealty of that reacting woman or man-at-arms, until it no longer induces conditioned *Responses*.

Nancy’s father was often sarcastic and she would often imagine that he or many males were always “loving” her with sarcasm. If you find that a person, such as a boss or acquaintance induces you to emote, then that is the very person in whose company you should remain, until you no longer emote from their insane actions. Refusing to allow your “self” to react robotically and emotionally will allow you insight into the reason for your reaction to these people. Not that it is all that important, so if you have a glimpse, that glimpse is probably all you need. Don’t belabour a memory, because it Really is not that important. The removal of your illusions are, though, which is what these slight glimpses afford your being. Jousting will teach you how to deny emotings, which induce insights, and thus balances your being.

For serial killers in the extreme and any other Pavlovian Perverts I suggest you practise will and deny tendencies all together until Realisations happen, if this is found to be impossible demand that institutions supply Discipline (not drugs). If a RMAA is killing you by manifesting cancer or some other “chronic” condition then Accept while entering Champion for long periods and you will have Realisations. With these the cancers disappear.

A practising “no”-er, whether she is a drinker, druggie, Homo sexual, thief, serial killer, or industrialist will remain trapped if it cannot acquire Patience/ Discipline/ Understanding in regard to these re-enactments (programmes). These people are not a label such as “nuts,” “drunks,” “fags,” “smack freaks,” rather they are Will-less people, Dreamers, sleep walkers. You don’t need a surrogate bairn attendant or psychiatrist or some other Templar (priest or witch) to tell you what is wrong or when you are Real or “cured.” You will know that you are Real when an activity does not induce emotings, Pavlovian reactions, conditioned *Responses*. A supposed “drunk” is not Real or cured if she or he can no longer drink alcoholic beverages. The drug is not the problem, rather it is the unRealness of the person that is the problem. An homosexual that feels guilt or embarrassment has not Accepted its nature. So many Pavlovian Perverts are addicted to “no”-ing. “no”-ing the activities of their “selves.” Having a readily available *Stimulus* to initiate “love” is why they become addicted, why they re-run incessantly the same programmes, hold onto the same values. Denial of these modi operandi reveals the reasons for the colorations of ones holy, thus changing and balancing ones coloration.

Muffy

Muffy is any upper middle class wife. She went to the right schools: Country Day, Mercersburg Academy, Cornell and then married the right kind of guy.

Muffy is alone in a store shopping for a dress. She sees two of her friends, but they don't see her. She over-hears a bit of what they are saying. Being lonely, imagining that she is jealous of their intimacy, a part of her imagines that they are talking about her, she stomps over to them and says, "I never!" and stomps off.

No use elaborating on this. You can fill in the blanks. You can imagine the imaginings that went through Muffy's mind. You can imagine how one of her expert liars practised selective sensory deprivation, audial distortion and hallucination.

These two may have been or may have not been talking about her. This matters little to the beast that is "love" starved. A beast that is in a state of desire/ stress/ fear-and-loathing sifts Reality for any define that can be misconstrued, any Sensate-able input that a RMAA's suit of armour can distort into a familiar symbol, a symbol that can act as *Stimulus* for another "love" programme.

Muffy was buying because her DRWAA knew that her "Daddy"/ husband would give her "reprimand-word-touch-love" for over charging on her credit card. But not half as much as she would give her "self." This is called guilt, something upon which she revells. This is "*self*-word-reprimand-touch-love."

Should we have her two friends run after her and apologise or have them assure her that they were talking about someone else. In either case everyone will be allowed to play. Everyone will get to emote, exuding negatively coloured life-Force. After all, girls just want to have fun.

Confusion

The confusion programme is far simpler than you can imagine. This sentence makes me giddy just thinking how ridiculous it is. Confusion is the sign of an animal well versed in the Tertiary Root of evil. The RMAA merely comes forth with critiques on a plethora of possible scenarios. This is dreaming at its most developed state. The individual's *Response* is not action but rather intellectual confusion or second guessing. Thinking at this point is so very numbing and excessively produced that the beast is immobilised. The thoughts or possibilities are a conglomeration of possible "no"s. There may be one or two actual remedial possibilities, but RMAA can only "feel" "loved" if and when "they" have a "no" to initiate "their" programmes, so "they" are so desirous of "love," that "they" must first go through and emote over that RMAA's long list of conjured "no"s. These silly RMAA have "their" "love," which is actually "self" "love," for that RMAA designed or imagined the possible remedies to situations that "it" may have created, such as hiding a key from itself, or neglecting dealing with a situation until its remedy becomes very nearly impossible, which is a familiar "no" in itself. Most of the worrywart's problems are self contrived. On some rare occasions the problem is caused by outside forces, but in 99 percent of the cases the problem lies with the RMAA's insistence to have "love" via the "no" *Stimulus* that "it" knows so well.

There are so many ways that a RMAA can get the "no" that it seeks. Confusion is just one, however the way in which "it" confuses you may be common ones or very inventive ones. It is the incessant RMAAic nature of the beast that is confounding. Perhaps the RMAA that does the automobile driving will have you always hide your keys from you. Through discipline and prayer (Ceptel) you could beseech "it" to do otherwise, re-programming "it." The keys could be given their specific location when "it" enters home, office, or visits another person's home. Or the RMAA that does the shopping has you, of course unConsciously, for that is the nature of roborosis, skip an entire aisle and assume that you must go to another store to get those items that the store apparently lacked. In relationships to others a RMAA may readily take things said out of context or completely pervert things said or read, so that some sort of extended period of verbal interaction or "word-touch-love" might take place.

There can be differences of opinion or arguments over resources, but most differences of opinion result from an Homo robotics' need to elicit "love" from others. And most of the lost keys, ruined materiel, hurt feelings, and so many deaths and maiming's are avoidable and their cause entirely fabricated. Dumb animals attempting to elicit attention via the technology in their RMAA's repertoire.

The Queen of Denial Denying Real love for “love”

Vly, I am a seafarer. Every time I would visit my friends in Delaware this one woman would drive down from New Jersey and stay with them for the weekend or even drive down just for the night that I was visiting to have dinner, then she would drive back that night or the next day very early. The husband of this couple I visit said that she was interested in me. Actually, knowing the beast, I know how this delicious looking woman from New Jersey will “love” me, if I let her. I knew her years earlier. I saw her interact with her husband. It’s no wonder they’re divorced. It was very instructive in my school work. Granted her husband too is a Pavlovian Pervert, but then isn’t everyone? It takes two to tango or should I say that it takes two perverts to Apache dance. I remember your reference to this that time you taught us to animate the stone in a five person joust. This woman is a knockout! And according to the husband of the Delaware couple, who had been seeing her before he met his wife, she was a lot of fun. Knockout is a Really “no” programmed term. Our culture is so perverted. Politicians “fight” and people are “screwing” other people. You’d think screwing would be a nice thing to have done to you, both as a reference to sex, which is so enjoyable, and as a reference to the marvellous technology of the incline plane, which means so much to our comfort. So being good looking is a knockout. Bestiality and the “no” programme is culturally definitive. “love” is everywhere.

Anyway I had business and relatives in Delaware. The husband of the Delaware couple has a mind for architecture and knows construction, and I needed help fixing a house up as a rental. We got to talking books and authors and I was fooled into thinking that he was sufficiently interested in Ascension that he might joust with me. He was into spiritual endeavours or so he intellectualised (dreamed) a lot and pretended to himself that he was trying to Ascend, but he was too Will-less to joust with me. He’s trapped in the Tertiary Root of evil: he smokes cigarettes, does all sorts of wrong things so that he can “*self-reprimand-word-touch-love*” that “self” that animates him. This one RMAA of his “loves” to “discuss” (more word-touch-love and eye-touch-love) with any surrogate Daddy that happens by. So guess who happened by? He saved me bundles with his home building knowledge, but in his own business he would make costly mistakes in order to elicit “reprimand-word-touch-love” from me or himself, or for that matter anyone his DRMAA could hallucinate into “Daddy.” I caught this before his Quaternary Root of evil cost me a lot of money. This friendship affords me a place to stay on occasion, which is nice. And he has this very moral stance- he constantly worries about his debt or what he calls karma. (an ÆR of 16-self crucified on the cross of family, love, community). What a martyr. He is his own worst enemy. I see it, we discuss it, but he hears nothing because this is just bullshit. I am his “Daddy.” He talks the spiritual crap but does nodda. It’s the eye- and word-touch-love “he” wants, not spiritual uplift as he pretends.

After this attempted courtship crap by Ms. Jersey, I finally decided that she had to stop and find true “love” with some beast like herself. So the next time she drove down from New Jersey I told the husband that I did not want to have dinner with them if this woman was going to be there. The woman was already on her way down and I insisted that he tell her that she was the reason for my not wanting to dine with them. So that visit with them I ended prematurely and subsequent visits no longer included this woman.

Every once in a while I would see her at parties given by mutual friends. I was always polite and said hello, and so forth, but I never went any further. Still I never saw her with another man, yet she was beautiful to the eye. And she is both well educated, and a successful paralegal.

Some years after this she was still single, so I gamed. What had induced this was simply that our mutual friends had once again brought up the subject of ‘us.’ This is after years, many years. You always say that dreamers dream out-of-(present) TIME, so they have no sense of Reality. Here was a case in point. I suppose the “no”-ing by me was just another *Stimulus* to her craziness. Still crazy after all those years.

By this time she had moved from Jersey. I phoned her because I was near her new home in Maryland. We had a good time at dinner and at play. I showed interest, but we didn’t get it on. I hugged her good night. So I waited a few months and then called her just before I had to leave. I asked if she were free for the night and

she said that she was. I suggested we go out to dinner and then make love. All of a sudden she was busy. I guess it was one of those rituals, a “no.” She said that she was busy and could not make it even though when I opened the conversation she told me she was free. I asked, “Is the reason that you can’t go out with me all of a sudden, is because I am being honest about wanting to make love with you?” Her answer was simply, “No, I have other things I have to do.” I then followed up with asking what she was doing right now, and suggested that I come over right now so we can make love and enjoy each other. She insisted that she was too busy. I drove down the street to see her and I discussed her antics over the last few years and when pressed for her reason’s for her actions she finally said that she once liked me and thought she would like to get to know me better, but that she had changed her mind. I looked her straight in the eye and asked her to be honest. I then asked, “Do you never want to know me intimately?” “Do you never want to make love with me?” I then told her that this would be final, that I would never ever have sex with her in this lifetime if this was what she stated here and now. “N-E-V-E-R,” I spelled out the word and then repeated it, “never.” She agreed, “ye,” spoken in a very quiet tone of voice. I hugged her, said good-bye and left very quickly.

The next time I came into the area, a year later, I saw her at a party and she was more than happy as ever to see me. She gave me a big wet kiss. I made it a game to stay with her throughout the party listening to her and keeping the conversation going. We ended up on a boat together for a moonlight sail, which is a custom on the tributaries of the Chesapeake Bay. We kissed and hugged and touched one another and she wanted to do it, but I reminded her that she had said “never.” Of course we did it.

We sort of reminisced the next day. We discussed her actions. She said that she was put off by my advance. I had been honest, but she, being well versed in “love,” could not be honest. She had read the romance novels, she had seen the soap operas, she had read Shakespeare’s Romeo and Juliet. There had always been a “no” to act as a *Stimulus* for her “love” programmes.

Vly at first your ideas sounded at best plausible, but then as I began fitting, what I see around me, to your point of view, I am convinced that we are as simple as you suggest.

I now Understand how people can convince themselves that doing all sorts of “no”s will elicit “love” and attention from others. A man-at-arms imagines that the people around them are their childhood attendants. That fact gets me. Also the fact that the animals leave Reality when they run any of their programmes. Like they don’t Really love you when they make love. Like they’re having their orgasm some where else, or with someone else. The hell with that! And I can’t trust these people when they say they will do something or other. Either they are directed to neglect you or they are directed to do the job wrong by a “self.” I just don’t trust “them,” quite frankly. I just don’t expect much from them any more. I sort of accept their insanity. I no longer emote when they do their Pavlovian thing. I have never forgotten when you first had me design my Champion. You told me that my Champion had to not take RMAA seriously: “my own or the RMAA of others,” you had said. How very true!

I Don't Want

The Emotional Aspect of a robotic-man-at-arms' suit of armour(y) is enacted and re-enacted by the expression and demeanour of the beast. The Physical and the Intellectual Aspects merely express the Emotional. Catch phrases that are the basis of a particular RMAA emerge as the individual attempts to become Real. This can be a result of a long fast. Basically, though, if an individual lays siege to his or her Dream Keep by constantly being wilful, huge plates of its RMAA's unRealness are shed, and what is left often are these pat phrases, for the personality of the moment is so utterly devastated (denied) that it only has a phrase (incantation) to Keep (remain) Asleep. Further simplification often brings hallucination, recalled situationals in which the devisation of the personality ("self") can be relived, and hopefully Accepted (unEmotionalised or de-charged).

A little more on pat phrases. Pregnancy involves bio-chemical shock after bio-chemical shock of the female man and human. Shock periods are shock periods no matter whether they are induced in a controlled way by the growth of personal Will or in an uncontrolled way bio-chemically or by the use of drugs. Shocks leave huge gaping holes in the Walls of ones Dream Keep generally and specifically dishevel the ruling RWAA's armour, which can allow insights. But in a beast or female man, insanity usually increases. Such a beast becomes very emotional, unstable and scared. In order to maintain the Walls and keep the armour intact, *self* talks to its "self," reassuringly. If "it" has a "no"/ "love" programme that it was taught or adapted from pat phrases its mother used while it was in the womb, it too will unleash this inheritance on the foetus it carries.

Here is one, "I'll commit suicide." This one was an imagined "love" sequential fantasy that a woman adapted to the fact that she felt neglected, so she constructed this 'play' and made herself the centre of the story. The story may have gone something like this. She felt neglected, a bio-chemically induced mood swing kicked in and she started talking to herself. "Sod him, the selfish bastard!" "I'll commit suicide and then who will clean your bloody house and cook your damn meals?" Eventually this entire fantasy, "love" programme, is re-run anytime she feels neglected, lonely and unappreciated. But it is eventually initiated and re-run with only the pat phrase, "I'll commit suicide!" And unbeknown to her, everything she said out loud is recorded by her own foetus. And this pat phrase is repeated and repeated and she emotes and emotes in *Response* after sending herself to the safety of "Womb." As the child grew it too found this pat phrase comforting during its life and possibly during its own pregnancy, if it lives that long. Of course it has been given the pat phrase, but it has to make up its own fantasy to use it. Suicide may not make procreation part of its future, for if the beast indulges in the meaning of this pat phrase she may terminate herself before getting very old.

One person may inherit a pat phrase, "there I stand with a gun in my hand." I would imagine that in this "love" fantasy she "lovingly" shoots the bastard for neglecting her or abusing her, and in her "love" fantasy she finally developed the guts to do something about this imagined or concerted abuser. Internal dialogue works just fine to maintain your own Asleepness. It is unwise to talk out loud to your "self" and your foetus unless they be pleasantries or niceties such as, "what a wonderful day" or "everything is just fine," for otherwise the beast may be adversely affected. Pat phrases are time bombs planted in the minds of foetuses.

Any such internal or external dialogue used to speak to a "self" or RWAA is used to remain safely imprisoned in ones Dream Keep. Words and speaking are programmes attached to the Primary Root. Speaking pat phrases to a woman-at-arms can cause you to fall into the mote. It is a death loop. You may be able to remove most of your armour of that specific RWAA as you sink to the bottom of the mote, but from there you are caught (psychotic) with no way out of that "self" and doomed to swim for ever in the mote of your Dream Keep until you grow tired and drown.

The strategy for dealing with these pat phrases, once you have reached that point of simplicity, is that you laugh at the silly "self" that uses them to define "it"'s insanity, the basis of "it"'s actions. One such typical phrase is "I don't want..." Another common pat phrase is, "they're looking at me" and "they'll never see me again." There are so many pat phrases. You will know easily how to deal with yours. This may all sound difficult or implausible, but these phrases will emerge as you simplify. Another is "I don't need you." Or, "I don't need anyone's love." Such a beast specifically needs to be touch-loved for an extended period. Stripping the clothes off and having everyone hug and hold one another in study group pretty well eliminates the major

part of a person's vast array of Aspectual Asleepness, a good description of the result of pat phases, for the armour(y) has an Aspect that is describable. This is what you will write in your personal diary in the process of the Siege. Though, some shift into their robotic-sex-programming. This programme generally "no"s sex, colouring it 'dirty' and then lapsing into the *Response* of sexual arousal. In such a case it is best to have the students not get naked, do not get exhilarated, do not shift into oo-ah mode. A lot of long hugs will do nicely amongst members of a group that are clothed. A Real person or teacher can Sense colorational changes. For the rest of you, starting a study group, erections and wet vaginas will indicate a shift into oo-ah mode. If I get a lot of this, I have students replace clothing and stand on their heads or I just scare the entire class. An act of will or a fright will bring them back from their oo-ah programme. Actually the Homo robotics, because its cultural obsession with sex, is more Real during this arousal session than most other times. It is an induced Shock or window opened to Reality, or nearly so.

You will notice that I use the term programme rather than the term program. The second definition in ⁵Collins Concise Dictionary Plus, page 1029 states 2. a performance presented at a scheduled time... Granted these are programmes much like the programs run in a computer, which is why I refer to the predominant beast on your planet as Homo robotics. Performance is the key word, for ones robotic-men-at-arms or "selves" are but actors that are putting on performances: programmes (or following a preconceived programme- like the ones handed out to an audience before a stage performance) that are useful, hopefully, to elicit "love."

Shocks. Acts of Will that a person decisively effects denies the specific RMAA at a given time "its" unRealness. Nudity is a shock or can be. Standing on your head can be a shock if it seems not to compute in a given situation. (for those who in some way incorporate head-standing with sex or some other "love" programme, some other out of the ordinary physical activity must be inaugurated, for contrast denies the particular RMAA "its" dreamscape). I don't know anyone who is brought out-of-(present) and into oo-ah mode by standing on their head, but anything is possible.

Once you reach a point whereby you notice a single phrase that your RMAA of a given time is repeating, in order to conjure its Dream Keep, Real-ise it. You can experience disIntegration. This is when your actual self and *self* are observing the antics of your unReal "self." By laughing at your RMAA, you introduce a shattering shock. Recall that your "selves" are mere children. "they" are serious. "they" maintain "their" Dream Keep by consistent and unwavering conjuring, which requires an effort, for much of the conjuring is unReal and nothing like Reality.

For instance, a woman loves her spouse: she hugs him and holds him, she cooks his meals and does his laundry, she comforts him when he is ill, yet his only programming is this performance wherein he is always crawling toward the negative in order to elicit attention. His MRMAA must pretend that any and all "loving" is done or is a result of first doing a negative, that by doing a "no" "it" has elicited attention. The actuality is that she hugs him for no reason. This random and unwarranted love must compute, so his MRMAA or mother-dealing-robotic-man-at-arms supplies a "no." This may come in the form of pushing her away or finding something wrong with life, her, his own life, life in general, but usually a specific wrong or ill is imagined or recalled. At any rate a "no" is supplied by the MRMAA, for this is the game or strategy of the specific personality or "self" ... to first have a "no," a symbolic negative (or a Real one).

She could hug him and laugh at his MRMAA when "it" performs, but she should insist that he try and Accept, returning the love. For a person that reduces one of its "selves" to the point that "it" is conjuring by repeating one key phrase, sinking into the unRealness, the un-Realisation, that the RMAA is absurd, asinine, idiotic and above all Senseless, will, quite possibly, shatter the Walls of "it"'s Dream Keep. At any rate it will align and subjugate that "self;" demanding fealty of "it" is then the next step you can take.

The same way you talk to and beseech a child to become more Real and Accept a hug (without "no"-ing it), you must beseech your RMAA. First you must hit the "idiot" with a big (proverbial) stick. Doing things

⁵Printed 1989 by The Bath press for William Collins Sons & Co. Ltd., PO Box , Glasgow G4 0NB. Prepared in conjunction with Market House Books Ltd., Aylesbury

differently is a good way to shock it to attention. Denying a RMAA can be most instructive. Fasting is such a stick as is any wilful action or denial.

Perhaps now you will understand why small children (or RMAA of adults) often deny that they want and need the Reality of touch love. Now, perhaps you will know how to rid yourself of “their” nonsense and gain control, demand fealty of that RMAA of yours that often says, ‘No, I don’t want...’

No, I don't Want Sex

I heard this description of an episode in the life of a few Homo robotics.

“The girls are flirting with Charlie; they’re giving him a hard time.” Giving him a hard time is “loving,” “it” computes.

And this, from an article in a newspaper account of a Pennsylvania rape trial.

The rapist said during his trial that the woman had kept whispering “no,” which he had taken as thinly veiled encouragement.

I think that it is clear that the beast is “no” programmed. The woman says, “no,” and this is taken as encouragement? Understandable. This is so typical of you beasts. More and more it is blatantly used in pop music.

“no”-ing is so much a part of the “love” programming, that no matter how pleasurable sex may be, the beast must “no” it ritualistically. When I say ritualistically I mean that certain things are done in sequence. For instance, you have a programme for changing the oil in your car or baking bread. If, you open the drain plug in the crankcase before placing a container under the plug, the old oil goes onto the ground. Or if you are making bread it would not work too well if you waited to knead the dough after you bake it. So rituals or sequences in the performing of certain programmes are essential, particularly to RMAA, which makes shocks and denial of these sequences so valuable in demanding fealty of “them” or, in re-programming these “selves.”

Also, the rituals of doing a task often are unnecessary. It would be wise to eliminate these rituals. Some rituals involve pain, antagonism or friction to or between yourself and others or put more precisely, between your RMAA and the RMAA of some other person, who are being hallucinated and even coerced into being a surrogate. This can be Real or recalled sublimely. When I say sublimely, I am telling you that no matter how long and full of irrelevant usage of neuro-pathways that went into the devising of a specific task working programme, that all of the associations and misAssociations are energised each time the programme is re-run, but it is done without the owner of the programme being completely aware of this. This will change the more you Lay Siege your Castle-unConsciousness. In the DOS or disk operating system of a computer this is called “@ echo off.” Some of these pathways are ridiculously huge and amazingly energy inefficient, slow and encumbering. Remember that in order for a RMAA to initiate its “love” eliciting armoury that “it” must be able to sense a familiar unReality, which is the job of “its” suit of armour: to distort Reality into familiar unRealities. This is numbing, so sex and most of life’s experiences are inAccessible. You are missing much that life is offering. You are missing pleasure, yes, but all I am concerned about is the FORCE, which you are not allowing yourself to Absorb, and consequently are not enabling yourself to Ascend.

A child that was taught the “no” programme to elicit attention, will incessantly repeat negative rituals in its endeavour to earn “love,” despite the fact that such rituals end in a spanking, therefore pain. This, as I have explained earlier, is because an Homo robotics, once a programme is initiated by a specific *Stimulus*, is taken back to “Womb” by the *Response*, which is a place of fantasy, out-of-(present) Time, a TRANCE state, a programme re-enacted. Any given *Response* is done unConsciously, autonomically. The term autonomics is used to describe the digestion of food, as well as many functions carried on by and within your body of which you are hardly aware. No one has to tell the body when to secrete the different enzymes or which muscles to flex in order to digest food, for it is that automatic. In order to stress the automatic nature of the beast and its unConscious nature I exaggerate by the use of the term autonomics.

Sex too is a “love” ritual. It is part of a RMAA’s suit of armour(y). If you are female it may be carried out by your DRWAA (“Daddy” dealing robotic-woman-at-arms) or by your MRWAA. If you first happen to feel sexual when your mother or a “mother”/ surrogate female bairn attendant such as a baby-sitter touched you, then sex becomes part of the armour(y) of a “mother dealing self” or MRMAA. Such a female beast may develop what your culture calls homosexual sex programmes. If you felt sexual around both a male and a female then you may come to enjoy sex with either males or females. In either case, as in all programmes, you

leave Reality as you enter *Response* and perform the programme. Sex may be learned early or late or in some cases not at all. If sex is never learned the person does not become slave to a RMAA in regard to sex.

Sex is over rated. Very over rated, for presently it is over practised. But it always gets your attention.

Sex is another “love”/ “no” programme and so there are rituals involved with having sex. For instance, in many cases, if a person does not perform certain rituals, then they cannot enjoy sex (reach the stage of *Reward* and emote), or so they imagine. Often times a person who is capable of having sex, is unable to access a person’s RMAA that knows and likes the sex “love” programme, for the sex programme has its *Stimulus Response Reward* as do all programmes, and if the seeker of sexual partnering is unable to perform the critical sequence of “love” rituals such as lying, doing certain things, or saying certain things, assume certain attitudes and affect certain roles, then sexual programmes can not be *Stimulated*. Just as the child re-runs its “no” programme despite the fact that it will end in a painful spanking, often times, those who have sex “need” to, proceed with sex sequentially. The “no” must exist or must be flashed inside the brain @ echo off or on before sex, or for that matter before any programme performed by Homo robotics can be initiated; particularly sex though, for culturally sex is refrained from being free-associated, which means that it is certainly part of the accoutrements of a person’s RMAAic suit of armour(y). Sexuality comes later in life and thus is merely a sophistication of a previously existing programme performed by a personality well versed in “love.” There are programmes learned by beasts that are not “no” programmes, however sex is rarely one of these. This is simply because of the universal cultural restraint and the fact that we conceal the body due to not only climate.

For example, a woman, watches a movie. This movie portrays mating and portrays sexual rituals, so the woman is led to believe that these rituals of “love” are right and correct. These, don’t forget, are but lights of different hues and vibrations that produce words. They are not Real people. They are images and sounds, but the woman records these impressions and may feel aroused and perhaps masturbated while holding these ideas in her mind. “love” then must mirror this perception or the beast does not consider herself “loved.” She may be taught to feint negativity, controversy or not wanting to experience sex or to be held and loved.

Sex could only be a Real Programme if it were free-associated. THIS IS SIGNIFICANT. Manipulating, lecturing a child, teaching a child forcefully generally slows down the learning process. If a thing is learned by free-association it generally is practical and relevant and a Magical process involving, not *Reward* that ends in emoting but rather Absorption. In other words anything that is free-associated is spiritual, for it enables access to FORCE, whereas anything that is forced upon someone becomes another “love” programme that ends in the wasteful exudation of precious life-Force every time it is re-run. Culturally sex is restrained, so what the beasts free-associate is that sex is bad or a no-no. For some mere mention of it sets them off.

If a child asks you to show it how to tie its shoe lace, don’t lecture or give a wordy explanation. BREVITY is a function of Realness. Show the enquirer only what it asks to see, answer only what is asked. Be stingy with your Awareness (time) and the child will learn to be stingy with its Awareness (use of time).

The reason sex is rarely a Real act is because of the fact that it is generally learned later in life and merely is added to a RMAA’s repertoire of programmes, all of which are “love” or attention eliciting programmes in 97 percent of the human population. The RMAA are unReal personalities that “Womb” the person they control, so sex merely becomes one of their “love” programmes; taking them to “Womb,” which is out-of-(present) Time but not out-of-(present) Space, rather only the perception of Reality is distorted, which is what wearing all that armour does. One can learn to shift through space but that is another lesson, and is learned once the above is *Understood*. One must first learn disIntegration by first learning the significance of shifting. As one enters Champion at Will: going into (Accessing) Reality, then faltering and Realising shift and re-instituting enter Champion, one becomes Aware of shifting and its importance.

Ideally, sexual acts should be openly practised by parents and society in general. But of course this won’t happen until Will/Consciousness grows universally.

Experiment. Life is fun. Life is to be experienced. This is the sole reason for being here, to Sense everything, to Absorb Force. If sex and life in general had been free-associated, remained an *experiment*, the person would have remained Real, become an expert Magician. If you are a “no”-er or expert “love”-er then you must wilfully acquire the ability to Access, so *experiment*.

Because unReal men must be manipulated to make a womb or home for the nurturing of offspring, which involves having them stop poking everything that happens by, and instead put that energy into building and maintaining a secure home, the institution of marriage was invented. Still they must poke or bore, from which the expression “he’s such a bore” comes? I suppose the saying should be “he’s such a borer.” Oh well, on with the show. My point is that men are biologically driven to bore, whereas women are driven towards making a secure external womb in which to safely raise their offspring. This means that the experiment will be different for the different sexes and for the two opposing types of animals: aggressive ones and passive ones. The experiment should involve paradox, as should all experiments conducted. For some, verbally speaking (culturally forbidden) sexual words and phrases is enough of a “no” to *Stimulate* their sex programme, but for many, long, darkly perverted and convoluted “love” rituals must first be performed. There are those that possess many sex programmes. Though, as a person ages their RMAA that knows and re-runs “its” sex programme the most becomes the predominant one used for sex.

Sex being a “love” programme rather than a Real love act performed in present Time, is initiated by “no”-ing. Also sex is confused with love and bound up with the idea that a home/womb can later exist in which to raise offspring. Having sex can be loving, but generally the beasts that do it “love,” are unReal, too inSensitive to Really love. You can try this and many experiments yourself. Never hesitate to experiment. I often require students to perform outrageous experiencings.

Beware of serious human for it may be seriously insane (unReal).

Or more simply...

Beware of Serious Men for They Are Seriously Deranged

You might entice the person to have sex with you or game to avoid that pleasure. In either case, when “no” programmed Homo robotics is involved you will induce emoting which is Absorbable. In most cases if you have sex and the sequence of performed rituals were neglected the participants feel unfulfilled or rather their RMAA don’t feel “loved.” Like the woman, whose first sexual experience, to which she always returns to out-of-(present) Time when performing sex, was being tied to her bed and raped by her father, the RMAA, that has as part of “its” suit of armour(y) a sex programme involving certain rituals, must replay (or so it seems) “its” rituals sequentially in order to enjoy sex. Otherwise they feel that they are un-“loved,” that something isn’t quite right. If the only attention a beast grew up around was guilt, sarcasm, put-down, or being tied to a bed, then that is the set programming. That is “love” to them. (Did you grow up around someone that constantly berated you, then that is what one of your RWAA will want out of a husband, ACTUALLY.)

If you are honest and have asked a potential sex partner if they wanted to enjoy one another without first performing the rituals of mating Pavlovian Perverts; usually this won’t work, for there existed no “no”s to act as familiar *Stimuli*. The look of dread as “no” or, what are considered lewd references to the sexual act at hand may be enough of a “no” to act as the pre-requisite *Stimulus*. If you look honest, loving and open, if you have a smile on your face, again there is nothing to act as *Stimulus*. Of course, often if a woman asks to have sex with a man that alone is “no” enough, for women have been cast into playing the passive role culturally. For you see, to a stupid male chauvinists a women being honest and Real, sexually, is hallucinated into a “no,” for she is imagined to be a “slut.” But for a man to be honest and open and having not performed the required rituals... such an *experiment* can be very enlightening.

For example, a person has an abusive marriage that lasted for some years. The reasons for not separating and divorcing were imaginings. Excuses such as children, house, security were repeated in ones mind. Sublimely the abusive spouse may have been readily manipulated into performing the role of ones antagonistic or abusive childhood attendant, such as a mother or father. For years the abuse was redefined into the “no” of just another “love” programme. In a subsequent marriage the bliss of not being abused delightfully ends in a feeling of lack of something (abuse and familiar “love” rituals). Having a Daddy figure to “no” her and then beat her had become part of the “love” rituals. The personality within her that animates her during these “love” rituals wants to live immersed in a Dream Keep that is familiar, a world where she is its centre and Daddy only

thinks about “her.” That personality obsessively gets her husband/ “Daddy” to abuse her delightfully. “it” trains him to hit her and antagonise her. These rituals with incessant apprehension, is “love,” true “love.”

According to the soap opera culture a woman must play the “no” of being hard to get. Or there must be trials and tribulations. A beast might imagine that there are some impasses such as a lover “cheating” on them (having sex and giving pleasure and receiving pleasure from someone other than their spouse or “lover”). Knowing that “love” is pain or “love hurts” is indicative of the insanity of the beast. The armour(y) of their RMAA is equipped with all sorts of hallucinatory processes and weapons to elicit “love”: feel pain and hurt. By the way Real love is not painful and does not hurt. And to give a person pleasure or to make them feel good is not a sin, rather it is good and right. Only a culture of “no” programmed Pavlovian Perverts could ever imagine otherwise. Of course, wars of attrition are won by cultures that can procreate most effectively. But planets are gutted by mining companies, once high population causes the destruction of the planet’s atmosphere, thus killing all life upon the Bio-sphere.

Rituals are to be studied. There are rituals in tying a shoe. There are rituals performed when picking the nose. There are rituals that are performed in having sex. To get to know your own rituals and to study the rituals and to Realise the mechanicalness of bestiality, do not hesitate to *experiment*. Non sequitur, paradox or performing rituals out of sequence or refusing to perform them at all helps to teach you about bestiality. Now here is an example of ritual. You could try this line of questioning on any one that happens by in your life experience.

John has known Mary for years, but, while they were hugging-friends, they were not ever sexual lovers. When John finds himself alone with Mary he asks her a line of questions, after qualifying that he requires her to give him honest answers to his questions. He must maintain openness and honesty. Whenever an emotion is elicited whether it be laughter or excitement, she must be reminded that he wants an honest answer or answers (requested with feigned seriousness).

“Do you enjoy sex?” If she laughs this off or tries to avoid honesty, John must establish and maintain her in the Realm of his questioning. He must establish that she has ever had sex. So John may have to ask, “Have you ever had sex?” or “Have you ever felt sexual?” This can be followed by “When was the last time you had sex?” or “When was the last time you felt sexually aroused?” Once John establishes the take-over of Mary’s DRMAA and cloaks it with the sex programmed part of “its” armour(y), then the answers are readily made by Mary.

“Remember, I want you to be honest,” he says with a serious expression on his face anytime he senses that she is leaving the Realm of her DRMAA’s sex repertoire. *Understand* that laughter is closer to Reality than seriousness. By remaining serious indicates that a “child” is ruling her, for children want to be taken seriously.

If Mary is shifted into sex programme, the questions and the answering of these questions are coloured as “no’s”: nasty, dirty, taboo, and then there is established intimate camaraderie. This is readily observable in her sexual expression. She may affect the same look on her face, the same glint in her eye that she wore when she did a “no-no” to elicit attention when crawling toward the negative, which is a mirror image of the expression her Dad wore as he picked her up the third or fourth time she re-ran this crawling toward the danger or negative, and he exclaimed or affected an expression akin to, “you little rascal.”

Understand that, if John has established fealty over his men-at-arms, he can affect this same devious glint and facial expression, which her DRMAA will readily mirror. This will bring about shift.

Note: affecting a glint refers to disIntegration: witnessing/loving his RMAA for “its” re-running of a programme, while (true) self Absorbs any and all *Reward* that Mary may flash. You need no teacher to learn this. Once you can do as I have described, you will readily Absorb.

The line of questioning can go on once the beast is shifted and has donned its sex re-enacting plate of armour(y) ...

“Do you like a man to fondle your breasts?”

Answer:

“Do you like a man to suck your nipples?”

Answer:

“Do you like the sight of an erection?”

Answer:

“Do you like the feel of a man’s erection inside of you?”

Answer:

“Do you like the feel of a man on top of you? or Do you prefer to be on top?”

Answer:

“Now I want you to be honest, I want to know what you like, how you like having sex. Do you enjoy cunnilingus, do you like having your clitoris licked very lightly and rapidly or do you prefer that it be licked slowly and rhythmically?” (For an Eskimo that, due to climate, uses nose rubbing as a ritual of intimacy, rubbing the clitoris with the nose may be more exhilarating. But for a culture that imagines that sexual Realities must be denied, sexuality must be restrained, so as to heighten sexual drive, coupled with an intimacy ritual such as kissing and even tongue licking, oral sex is considered as intimate. I find it funny that some people refuse to do it for the wrong reasons. These people imagine that sexual organs are dirty, when the actual truth is that the mouth is host to far more germs than most sexual organs)

Answer:

questioning continues ...

“Do you like to hold an erect penis in your hands?”

Answer:

“Do you like performing fallatio, the taste and feel of a hard penis in your mouth?”

Answer:

“You said you like having sex. Why don’t you and I enjoy each other sexually?”

Answer:

Quite often this will result in an immediate “no,” or denial early on because certain rituals were not performed. In most cases the questioning is curtailed immediately or deflected either by a serious “no” or an attempted reframing into a joke. In still other cases the friend will attempt to manoeuvre the questioner into playing a more familiar role. The expression on the face, tone of voice, look in the eyes should all be noted, as well as demeanour.

Another thing you might try to *Understand* is that if John got the friend to shift, don its DRMAA’s sex programme, induce fear and loathing that takes the form of intense sexual arousal, yet he remained Real and thus Absorbing, and this is followed by “no”-ing, thus never indulging in sex, then he has devised for the friend a new plate of “its” armour(y), a new variation to “its” “love” programme. Then whenever he wishes to Access free life-Force he can return to that beast and readily re-enTRANCE it, induce it to again don this particular suit of armour(y). That armoury or programme will emote readily and in fact will collect huge amounts of life-Force while in fear-and-loathing. As it emotes these, John merely Absorbs.

Let’s review some of the possibly missed elements. “no”-ing comes in many forms, but must be imagined or pretended in order to initiate any “love” programme, therefore practically any programme devised or learned after the age of one to two and a half, after being programmed in the Primary Root of evil, requires a “no,” imagined or Real, as *Stimulus*. The rituals of sexual “love” involve the “no” of having sex, for society infers that sex is a “no”: not allowed, for public nudity is illegal and sex organs of both sexes and breast regions of females are traditionally concealed. Mere talk of sex is “no” enough for most people. These animals colour sex as “dirty” or “nasty” or place some such mild taboo on these in order to initiate sex (“no” as *Stimulus*). This can be sublime or seen in the expression on their faces: a twinkle in their eyes that they are being or are about to be bad. This is the same twinkle a child well versed in “no”-ing will express as it looks at a bairn attendant previous to doing something bad or undesirable in hopes of eliciting long periods of “reprimand” and “eye-touch-love.” There are a string of ritualistic “no”s, each unique to the individual and the individual’s helm or autonomic filter/ hallucination mechanism. Some require that imagined bairn attendants are “no”-ing them in order to have sex or feel (in) “love.” These might be incorporated in the process of dating where by the female pretends to be too busy or too popular to go on a date. It is very difficult for a “no” programmed beast to be honest/ Real, for after all Grande Opinion and having to “no,” particularly imagine a “no” in order to use as

Stimulus has been in usage for most of a Pavlovian Pervert's life. After successive "no"s of being too busy to go on the date, the male and female are both *Stimulated*. If you were to look closely at the processes that take place during courtship and in the expression of "love," you quickly can define the re-running of "no"/"love" programmes.

As he looks at her he might shake his head in the negative (horizontally back and forth) and say "I think you are wonderful" or "You sure are beautiful tonight" or "I Really love you." During proposals or during declarations of love the speaker wears a hurt expression, may whine, pleads his or her love to its spouse or "lover." There is a movie called "My Step-mother Is an Alien."⁶ In the movie the actor as alien shows confusion over the expression and tone of the earthling that is espousing his "love" for her, for his expression is negative, a frown, and his voice is anxious, which is the opposite that honest love and Real acceptance involves.

Even the progression leading up to kissing and the process of foreplay often involves "no"-ing in Earthlings. The female pretends to not like being touched in the "no" areas of its body, areas defined by the norms of society as taboo to touch or talk about. This both *Stimulates* her as well as him.

Instead of the above mentioned line of questioning, let's say John asks Mary simply and honestly, "Why don't you and I enjoy each other sexually?" then proceed to kiss her. How far do you think you would get with such honesty and Realness? Try it and see.

You can easily recognise why honesty and Realness is so foreign and unNatural to the beast, even confusing. This brings me to another experiment I conducted for a student.

I met a woman who had just left her husband. She had been sorely beaten. It was a cold night, so I took her to my place. Eventually I told her it was time I returned to work, that I would be gone for sometime. The night before I left for the trip she decided that she would establish a sexually loving relationship, so she got into my bed. Up until this point I had been helpful and accepting but in no way amorous. We made love (I induced orgasm in her so I could Absorb her emoting, but of course I do not waste my energy in such an endeavour). I called a student and told him to become amorous with her while I was away. I had been gone sometime, so when I called to tell her that I would be another two or three months longer, she was eventually coerced into having sex on occasion with him.

I chose this student for he had illusions in regard to women. He fell in "love" with every woman and because he loved each thus, he would not give them "love," so they would leave him because he did not know how to "no" them "lovingly." This 'falling in love' (actually 'in lust') readily is so common in a culture that is so inhibited and inSensitive, sexually restrictive and grossly dishonest.

I called him and told him when I would show up, and I insisted he sleep with her that night of my arrival. I called her to tell her a few days previously that the trip was extended, so she would not do the usual thing which was to require that her lover never spend the night, for it should be rainy and I told him to insist upon staying over night. The night of my return he was in my bed with her. As I entered the place an alarm went up and she spoke to her lover of an intruder. He made light of the intrusion suggesting it was one of her friends. I crept to the kitchen turned on the light and tuned the radio to a jazz station that she knows I listen to, and began fixing my breakfast. It was around two in the morning. She came into the kitchen once she guessed it was no intruder. She did not greet me with a hug or a kiss, but said that she understood me over the phone as saying that it would be sometime before I returned. She was wearing guilt. I said that there were changes that took place in my schedule, but that I certainly was glad to be home and crossed the room to kiss her. She broke that short, ran from the room, and shortly there after here comes my student. He looked at me (we quietly waved), she was upstairs in the bedroom. I said very loudly, "Won't you stay for something to eat?" (I motioned for him to be quiet, shook my head negatively and shoed him away with hand signals). As he left I said, "Have a good day, come again sometime." She no doubt was waiting for an emotional reaction. I prepared and ate my breakfast, looked over mail. Eventually, I went into the bed room and attempted to be amorous, which she rejected, but said nothing about the incident. The next afternoon when she returned from work I still said nothing about the incident. The third day she accused me of not loving her. I suggested she not confuse sex with

⁶ My Step-Mother is an Alien (the movie) © 1988

love. There are a lot of ways to interpret this. I may have been suggesting that it was all right to have sex with that guy, whomever he was, for I love her just the same. Or I might have been suggesting that she should not have confused having sex with me as having anything to do with love or lack thereof. There are a slew of interpretations. But what resulted was that she left the fourth day after returning from work. I helped her move her things into the car and I was very polite, accepting (Absorbing), and loving. I acted the same way I feel: that there is nothing wrong with what she had done. Actually all the emotings of the beasts that surround me emote Absorbable life-Force. Her DRMAA had anticipated that this “no” of infidelity would result in a *Response* or melodrama. When it did not, her RWAA was confused. Whenever the beast is confused it fabricates or imagines a “love” programme’s *Stimulus*: a “no.” This is done autonomically. She in effect did all the imagining. My keeping quietly Real and in (present) Time compelled her DRMAA to supply “it,” “its” own illusion. She accused me of not loving her, when actually I refused to “no” or “love” her. She tried one last effort to get me to do something that computes, she tried to strike me pugnaciously, but I, of course felt it coming and shifted and drew her force, which thoroughly disoriented her. She jumped into her car in fear and drove off.

The student came over and I told him what transpired. She had, as I had warned, approached him to see if he “loved” her, wanted to mate, etc. He had been specifically directed to enjoy sex with her but that was all he was to do. I directed him to concentrate upon this endeavour of being the super lover and perfect sex partner, so intensely that he would not indulge his MRMAA, which was what had always happened throughout his life. Much like a student that “pretends” that it is an alcoholic so that it can ritualistically afford its “self” “reprimand-word-touch-love” for falling off the wagon, must test for the growth of Will by taking two sips of an alcoholic beverage randomly over a course of time, then leave it alone as an act of Will and Realness. I defined the joust. He was to be the ultimate sexual lover. He was to do this very intensely and Absorb anything she exuded. This student had to indulge in Real sex, for her sensitive enjoyment rather than in order to be drawn into his personal illusion of “true love” of “his” “mother.” The lesson always is to Absorb rather than emote. Game. Gaming is an Act of Will.

In the first case of having sex with a friend that one Accepts and has up to this point only hugged and held, and having her acceptably have sex for sexual enjoyment and Real love of a sexual kind rather than as a “love” programme, quite often the female in this case (similar line of questioning can be used on a male by a female) will try to “no.” It’s R(W)MAA must “no” to merely initiate any “love” programme. “no” comes in so many forms and may be sublime, except for a facial expression, physical posture, change in breathing patterns, so it is helpful to momentarily stop these by a reminder of honesty. Also if the friend does honestly decide to enjoy sex with you then it is important that such sex is done in (present) Time/ Reality. Granted this is not possible with beasts, but should be done by the student in Reality. Game to have the beast keep its eyes open and on yours. Many animals can’t come to orgasm this way, because in order to leave Reality and return to “Womb” (that symbolic place out of Reality) their R(W)MAA that has sex (a repertoire from “its” armoury) must close down a bit (selective sensory deprivation). The animal’s armour for sex must take on a particular hue and vibration, get very heavy to keep Reality out. “it” will have the eyes close perhaps and shut down sounds and many senses and hallucinate its original sexual memory or, if that one was not very pleasurable, then one that was. Most return to that first masturbation.

Sometimes a person has never even masturbated before being sexually initiated. Often times I get one of these as a student. By them free-associating having sex rather than re-running some armoury, they are light years ahead of their fellow students. They immediately parallel (don’t have to disIntegrate) and Sense and balance the distasteful aspects of their primary sexual experience (being deflowered). This key Realised allows for tons of other Realisations. I am usually teaching her all sorts of things and she is soon sent to others of her own sex to really excel: becomes a Lady.

There is a proper way to tie your shoe, brush your teeth or comb your hair. There is also a Real way to enjoy sex. I often have students joust formally before having sex. Formalised Jousting you will learn of later in this book. In this way sex is far more Real and so more Sensual for participants (and if there are imbalances [Wall builders] in regards to sex, then Realisations will balance these). Basically though sex and the touch or

foreplay that can be performed must be done with eyes opened and all senses Aware of Reality. Most beasts merely relive or re-run previously devised programming. This entering “Womb” can readily be sensed by you as your partner closes its eyes or changes its expression. The same way a certain type of person frowns when it goes into “work” TRANCE, a person will enter “sex” TRANCE and this TRANCE includes “its” expression(s).

At first the answers to the line of questioning has to be kept honest and Real, but later a much more difficult task must be wilfully accomplished, which is keeping the person in Reality. Patience/ Discipline/ Understanding: Will/ Realness. I have seen looks of deviousness on faces, frowns, dread, fear and gross displeasure as sex partners enter their TRANCES for having sex (particularly on their way to reaching orgasm). I have had students photograph these facial expressions to make my point plain to the enTRANCED. A beast readily enters TRANCE when it does any and all tasks. Sex is merely another TRANCE entered while “it” re-runs a programme.

In the case of the woman that I took in to my house, she wanted me to “no” her actions. It was apparent that she had used her RWAAic armoury to concerte someone to “love” her, what with all the wounds she had when I picked her up. People at work, in the TRANCE of work, often re-run the accident programme (Secondary Root) or mistake programme in order to elicit “love.” The entire time this woman had a relationship she was “no”-ing. She had to cheat on her “lovers.” Or that is how she perceived having slept with the student, for she accused me of being uncaring for I did not get mad at her or the student. The previous “lover” was always a surrogate father by whom she wanted to be “loved”/reprimanded. This she wanted me to play. One of her RWAA’s was equipped with armoury specifically designed to concerte “lovers” to “love” her with “beating-touch-love.” Yet I accept this, her programming. Actually sex is Sensory, and the energy it releases is readily Absorbable. She wanted “reprimand-word-touch-love,” while I see nothing wrong with a person having sex. Would you deny your friend a candy bar? Exclusionary “love,” whether this be “sexual love” or any sort of “love” is a lack of Acceptance. Love, Real love, excludes no one. Exclusively giving your love to one person is very unReal, selfish. What actually takes place in the instance of marriage of two people of the same sex or opposite sexes is merely the marriage of a mirage: these two participants imagine that they have a surrogate bairn attendant all to themselves. Their hallucinations shift between imagining different bairnhood attendants. A female surrogate alternates between being anyone of the females of the Homo robotics’ childhood. The same is true of males, the hallucination shifts between perhaps brother, father, uncle or any other male that the female (or male) beast experienced on a regular basis as it grew up.

Rituals are very significant. If you were to just have sex: no kissing, no fondling, no words, nothing other than in out and done, then none of the rituals could be performed or processed in the beast’s mind. Most participants feel unfulfilled, sort of short changed. I have found that while many do feel this way, on occasion I have found expert masturbators, who have no problem with this. Since sex to them is masturbation, they are satisfied by this sort of sex. They don’t feel that anything is missing, for they have always supplied the necessary rituals themselves. And “these” have the person leave Reality at the slightest symbolic “no” and re-run “their” masturbate programme.

Sex Really is hardly important on a planet of so many people. Love is far more important. Think of all the lonely people in the world that are left to practise “*self*-word-touch-love,” which like all “love” programmes end in the release of negative life-Force. This is why the institution of marriage should and must be redefined. ADVICE: A marriage should be between a group of consenting and loving adults rather than between pairs of adults. The pairs tend to elicit “love” from hallucinated bairn attendants by the use of “no”s such as, quite often, the use of promiscuity. This can spread HIV and other sexually transmitted diseases. A marriage of a group of people, who sign a contract for a given period for the purpose of procreation and raising offspring or for life, can be afforded sufficient variation. Not merely sexual variation amongst all the sexually mature members of the marriage, but variation between those with whom they interact, such as the offspring, so that surrogate bairn attendants can not readily be imagined. Also in the day to day dealing with so many people a person is, to a greater extent, required to remain in Reality. The more Asleep a beast is, the less it wants to be in a large group of people, for its RMAA have trouble placing so many people into familiar childhood roles via its RMAAic suit of armour (hallucinations) and its armoury (its programmes for the elicitation of attention). Add the seeming

paradox of having a variation in sex partners and unRealness can readily be shattered. Understand that whether a marriage is a group or a couple, individuals may still use the “no”/ “love” programme to evoke from those around it attention. The task of dealing with so many people and situations requires much more time spent in Reality, dealing with Reality, which is very significant.

Sex has been purposely manipulated in most of the Earth cultures that have survived to the present day in order to create large populations to win wars of attrition. So it has been made far more important than it should presently be, for the excessive population on your planet has become a problem, which cannot be addressed by sexual restraint, which has been used up to the present time to manipulate mankind to copulate excessively. Where the law has stabilised a culture, and wealth has been passed on from generation to generation, there can be an excess of time to dream. If it wasn't for this and the indulgence in rabbit-like copulation, your life on earth would be a utopia.

Another honest way of looking at sex between loving individuals is to ask the simple and honest question: “Would you deny someone you love a sweet piece of fruit, which is a sensory experience?” Then why should you be against this person, you love, enjoying the sensory experience of having sex with someone other than yourself? You are here to Accept/ Absorb life-Force. Having sex accesses released life-Force according to the participant's choice. In either case it is a Real occurrence or can be.

Experimenting and observing the shifting of individuals will help you understand Homo robotics. Human beings remain in “Womb” by “self” enTRANCEment (and self remains imprisoned). The necessary denominator for “self” enTRANCEment is a “no.” Present cultures, ones that have out survived others in history are those that feed such programming. The RESTRAINT of sexuality has enabled these cultures to produce EXCESSively huge populations. By this time it should be plain to you just how perverted these misconditioned beasts-of-the-field are, so do not hesitate to experiment, to elicit Absorbable emotings. If you hope to learn to manipulate and change your cultural misprogramming, then you must REALise the nature of the beast and how the “no” programme has defined the most powerful cultures on your planet.

I used the subject of sex to get your attention. However, be observant and never hesitate to experiment-do other than your Asleepness, your robosis, demands that you do normally, Naturally. Don't be afraid to be unNatural. Do not disdain and negate the Naturalness of your “selves” or the “selves” of others. Accept “their” bestiality: first laugh at “them,” later merely Accept “them” and “their” ways. And definitely Accept/ Absorb the emotings of the “selves” of others.

She “loves” to Be a Martyr

I was invited to this special occasion. It seems that in childhood Edith's granddaughter had come to dislike her because of some sort of impasse, long standing for years, as well as so many more problems with Edith's sister as well. The occasion was supposed to be genial and conciliatory, a sort of mending of past emotional wounds. Edith generally was animated by RWAA that alienated everyone, for this is how “they” could imagine that “they” were the centre of attention. I say “they” because all of her RWAA were martyrs: mother dealing, father dealing and even older sister and older brother dealing robotic-woman-at-arms.

Edith, her sister, her granddaughter and myself went out to lunch. Edith promised me that she would be very kind and nice to everyone. Lonely for “love,” she put on this thick and unconvincing gleefulness. It was ridiculous. I personally was glad to have come along for she had everyone within ear-shot emoting and the restaurant was quite filled with customers.

People seated in the neighbouring tables looked askance at Edith for her more than affected actions. Edith was a trained actress and she was putting on the sweet syrup. Over doing it would be an understatement. Apparently she had been down on Sarah the last time she saw her granddaughter, so she wanted to seem fun and optimistic, but she only appeared silly to everyone. I noted that everyone seated in the tables that were within ear-shot exuded displeasure and some exuded embarrassment in response to Edith's insincere antics. It was

wonderful. Edith just gushed insincere congeniality. She said her queer greetings to her sister and then she directed her insincere congeniality to her granddaughter, Sarah, as well.

Edith “loves” her sister. This “love” involves getting her sister to “no” her. So Edith focused her attention on her sister: hoping for, desiring disfavour, desiring any hint of “loving” response. Her “love” for her sister was so very intimate that she did not bother to note anyone else’s response to her histrionics. If she had, she would have noted right away that her act was an embarrassment. She always accused her sister of not supporting her. She always accused her of always being hyper-critical of everything she said, everything she did. So this time she would be revoltingly nice and pleasant. Of course she had to say snide remarks, but she was enTRANCED and did not hear what she was saying. Hilariously she did say them with a smile. Before the meal was over, her sister left in a huff, for Edith did her normal “loving” thing: “no”-ed her sister. Edith “loves” to be “loved.” Hatred is an advanced form of “love,” which she has perfected over the years.

Her granddaughter, Sarah, later said that she was as convincing as a cheap whore faking an orgasm. Sarah said that she wanted to puke, but restrained herself because it was lunch. I thanked her for her restraint.

From that point on for weeks and months Edith could dredge up the memory of her sister’s snide remarks (yet I heard none), and disapproving looks, which were the same ones strangers within reach were giving her for her affected and insincere “nice person act.” A week after the lunch she told me about it twice. Then I didn’t see her for a week and then she ranted and raved, again. Three weeks later she still dredged it up. Then today, over five weeks after the lunch, she told me again that she has spent sixty-nine years putting up with her sister’s disapproval. She told me very emotionally for the hundredth time how she refuses to waste her time dealing with, cow-towing to or thinking of her sister. So I said that she must derive great pleasure from her relationship with her sister, which she ignored.

Edith is incessantly looking for “love.” Since she was conditioned, that *Stimulus* for her “love” programmes is a “no”; she sifts Reality or her past for “no”s so that she can re-run “love” programmes. So I said what I say every time she enters this TRANCE state, “Why do you get yourself all worked up? Why do you keep harping on her? You are so “Desirous of Womb” or so in “love” that you imagine that you must enjoy the memory of your sister and work very hard to recall every bad thing she says or does to you? You seem to relish your hatred of her. Why not let go of your addiction to “love”?” This invoked the same response as usual, “I am. I won’t have anything else to do with her!”

Three hours later I visit her as she is watering her plants. I suggest that someone should make her a stand to hold her plants. She was in complete agreement for she told me that she has put a lot of time in her plants and they were her best friends, “for they don’t sneer and talk disapprovingly of me!” So she was still “loving” herself via internal dialogue. She kept on reviewing the “no”s of her sister, Real or imagined. It matters little whether her sister supplied the “no” or whether it was imagined, which it was. It matters not one bit from what point in past time Edith recalls her *Stimulus*. The “no” could have been concerted from others via Grande Opinion, controversy, rudeness by Edith’s own actions, or the “no” could have been Real: that someone looking for “love” in all the wrong places may have in fact done something negative to Edith. Internal dialogue and remembering “no”s are entirely up to the individual, as is one’s happiness in life.

In Edith’s case she is addicted to “love.” Whenever she “feels” or imagines that she is lonely, then she dredges up a “no.” It is amazing how many things she can colour into “no”s. The mail she receives, the people she knows, she “no”s the books she reads, the memories. On and on she goes, devouring her very being-ness.

Edith is typical of many Homo robotics, which is why I use her as an example for students to spend time with, so that they can plainly view Asleepness. The only way Edith could deal with derision was to pretend it was “love.” And now she looks for even the slightest hint of disfavour from anyone and everyone. In fact she will even go so far as to concert others to play familiar roles of surrogate bairn attendants that “no” her. As she gets older these “loving” RWAA become expert at antagonism, sarcasm, etc. The armoury of her RWAA is chucked full of programmes made up of phrases and actions that elicit “love” readily from others, which is derision or physical or verbal abuse. When a person is around Edith, “love” is in the air!

Note: Before classes are started in an area teachers peruse the countryside for lessons. These are often heavily categorised. Some classes receive booklets with maps or common meeting places for meeting and observing

their “lessons.” If I am teaching a class of hopeful void warriors I go to the trouble to do numerology and astrology charts. I have games outlined and questions that students must answer.

Still these robotic-women-at-arms prefer to use the Tertiary to “feel” “loved” when Edith is alone. She has perfected the Tertiary Root of evil, for she remains recalling and re-running “love” programmes internally. Her RWAA that are all martyrs have discovered that many people refuse to be concerted so easily into being a derisive “mother” or “father,” “sister” or “brother.” So her RWAA finds it simpler to use recall of past negative *Stimuli* in order to “feel” “loved.” As the general public in a locality gets to see her insanity and refuses to have anything to do with her, she must turn towards the Tertiary. A constant flow of students keeps her ‘happy’ and available, for otherwise she would move again. As a child she and her mother would nay-say others such as her sister, father or almost anyone. Edith plays this out incessantly. She remains loyal to only one mother figure unless another happens along whom will give her more attention or give her more possessions, money or can afford to entertain her at fancier restaurants. Then she re-runs one of her crafty Quaternary programmes in order to dismiss her only friend (“mother”) of the past few weeks or months. Being a trained actress her armoury is well versed in ways to ‘dump’ useless or less useful mother figures, particularly if they catch on to or become wary of her insanity.

Hilariously, the very same granddaughter that derided Edith for her absurdly over-sweet pretence also is affected with the affectation disease. One could call this insincerity: the Edith curse, for just about every one of her descendants have it. The men seem to use it as a joke for they hold her as a joke, whereas my study of her female descendants reveals snobs. Edith goes from one act or re-enactment of armoury to yet another. Either she is recalling “no”s from her past or *Stimulating* someone to play out “loving” situations with her. Edith is constantly in turmoil, constantly negating every thing and every one in her personal environment. It is hilarious to watch. She goes from one negative to the next: on and on and on. Having herself been an actress and entertainer she will watch a drama and always find disfavour with the performances. And no one has good taste but her. She uses Grande Opinion to a great degree to manufacture “no” as needs arise.

Edith is not the exception, rather, she is the rule. Your planet is filled with people that look for “love” incessantly and recast every situation into a “love” programme. As an Homo robotics well trained in “love” gets older, they focus there fanaticism on perfecting their Dreamscape. They live in a make believe world where they are the centre of attention, where people are “loving” them. The predominant RWAA that rule Edith have narrowed her armoury to just a few programmes. The major one is the Tertiary. She lives in an escape where everyone “loves” her. She doesn’t have to actually get everyone to “love” her for actually she has run out of people to concert into the role of “loving” surrogates. Her self-pity does it all.

Edith’s “love” of her sister is typical of the beast. This short circuit of “love” is practised all over your planet by these beasts and is called hatred. Any time a beast such as Edith imagines she is lonely she merely dredges up a negative memory. Of course first she sifts Reality for any and all hints of negativity. If this is not wise or not available, then she runs the Tertiary Root. As beasts such as her get older they narrow their “love” programme down to just a very few that they incessantly flash until they devour themselves and thus die. The process can happen late or early, the main variable is how isolated they become and how wealthy is their situation, for if Reality requires little of them then they have time to dream and thus perfect their Asleepness, readily. This is why the youth of America and those in many wealthy industrialised nations are having trouble. Discipline is lacking. Children are not required to practise magic in present time by doing chores or school lessons. If parents are inclined to discipline their children the laws of the land may land them in jail for trying to do so, for Pavlovian Perverts “no” their actions, which comes Natural to the Asleep. Because they are denied learning Magic (Cause, Effect and Access) these children instead perfect “love.” It is amazing that your planet and its inhabitants have survived this utter nonsense, which limits Sensing and Absorption. The human ability of thinking (Dreaming) while not Real, has been used to design new and better ways to exploit nature, via envisionment (an effective form of dreaming that involves Will). Machines, chemical and biochemical applications have been developed making life ever easier. But thought is thought. And thought of any kind keeps Reality at bay. Thinking can be valuable, but mostly it is used to conjure and maintain the Walls of ones Dream Keep.

Edith's programming eventually alienates everyone she meets. "her" need of a "mother" to be her comrade in "no"-ing, as well as her ability to readily hallucinate new acquaintances into this new "mother" periodically, one with more wealth or more value, has aided her in a better life. She has always found someone to play "mother," someone to enable her to survive the other anti-survivalistic aspects of her insanity, someone that needs to be the only intimate friend to Edith for a period of time.

Sometimes it seems that the beast is going to destroy itself. The Lemming Process in humankind is in fact taking its toll on not only the specie but on the planet. This, like so much that you do, is entirely up to yourselves.

Alcohol Test

As any Homo robotics gets older it perfects a few of its “love” programmes.

A person that is considered a hopeless drunk is not hopeless at all. The RMAA that insists upon re-running that same programme is precisely perfecting that programme. That RMAA is wilfully concentrating all its efforts on doing this one thing with fail-safe precision. What exactly is going on? Well the beast in this case has been taught the Primary, it knows that to do the undesirable elicits attention. It also has learned the Secondary or the value of a technology that elicits attention by being hurt, so the adaptable beast reasons that “self” inflicted pain, or doing something detrimental to its health is going to elicit attention. Sometimes a “lover” can be found, other times the animal must play for itself the role of bairn attendant, which is accomplished by talking to itself, judging itself, “no”-ing itself or what is called feeling guilty, The Tertiary Root of evil.

Feeling guilty and self-pity is a “self” “love” programme. It is carried out entirely in a limbo state, for *self* becomes surrogate bairn attendant that keeps incessantly “no”-ing “its” “self.” What a perfect “love” machine. Self contained, requiring no one else to be coerced into playing the role of judge, bairn attendant or jury.

Unfortunately, these silly animals, if they use drinking to kick off their “no”-ing, often then do things that are “no”s in anticipation that a husband, wife, friend, child, acquaintance, complete stranger, or constable will be readily coerced into performing “reprimand-word-touch-love.” The alcohol in the case of the drunk merely lowers its façade of sociability. Then doing the “no,” which it wouldn’t think of doing sober, is done effortlessly. The mind is cloudy, the synapse are Realising dysfunction, walking is difficult, subsequently, but more than all this the RMAA can more readily do as it wishes. Alcohol becomes a symbol, drinking becomes a symbolic act, for once the body experiences the alcoholic attitude shift or coloration an entire (autonomic) repertoire of programmes are accessed from that RMAA’s armoury. These may range from telling jokes and acting (paradoxically) uncharacteristically personable, to being a bloody pain in the ass. These programmes called forth by the alcoholic “feeling” or attitude shift are just that: programmes. Alcohol may be the symbol or shifter, but the knowledge of the Primary and Secondary Roots of evil are at the basis of all that beast’ programming.

Alcohol is not the actual problem. The misprogramming of the beast is the actual culprit. I like the alcoholic because I have a test for such a being that is readily available. It is called “have a drink.” If a being practises Will (enter Champion) to the point that it goes back before “no” programming occurred and thus removes its true-self from the dungeon of the Castle-unConsciousness by ruling its robotic-(women) men-at-arms, then the husk of enter Champion becomes the residence for self. Such a person is so Real that alcohol no longer has the same affect. The disorientation becomes completely unacceptable, and generally the bitterness of the alcoholic beverage is unacceptable. Often something as sweet and fruity as beer can be tolerated, as long as consumption is held down to a point that disorientation does not take place, for Real people do not like being, in any way, maimed, or incapacitated. Alcohol plugs a person’s synapse, as do sugars, so Real people, who have Accessed FORCE do in no way desire to have this link severed.

On occasion a teacher may use alignment or empathy to introduce SHOCKS in their students. This is only used in extreme cases. This is because no Homo sapiens wishes to become less than Conscious. My personal view is that I don’t care about burning up the body I now use, because there are so many available on your planet. But then, the more Will you have, the more choices you have. I need not wait for rebirth. I am an interloper, a ‘walk right in and set right down’ sort of a being. My present body died in 1981. A common characteristic of many drunks and druggies is that ingestion of certain substances becomes part of rituals and major *Stimuli* for “love” programmes that society calls addiction. Alcohol or the use of any drug, such as the caffeine in tea or coffee, used on a regular basis merely becomes part of the encumbrances of the person’s suit of armour(y). Use of the drug or sometimes going through the ritual of using an insufficient quantity of the drug will set the armoury for elicitation of attention ‘on’. Physiologically one “drink” with half a

thimble full of alcohol or serving these 'addicts' a non-alcoholic beer can induce an 'addict' to affect light-headedness and for "it" to initiate its "love" programming. The "drunk" re-running its programme will be out of control. This act or re-enactment involves being blatantly drunk, and to anyone that happens by one elicits disfavour or reprimand. Of course when this is not available, one can always "no" their "self" of the moment, the "one" that ingested the alcohol, or thought they did. You can give a "drunk" bubbly apple juice from a refilled cider bottle and watch her re-enact her "drunk" programme. Drunks are not addicted to alcohol half as much as "they" are addicted to "love. But being addicted Really involves not merely the chemical but this coupled with the rituals of "no"-ing.

So the real test of drinking knowingly a gamed bit of alcoholic beverage for a one time drunk without asking or wanting more is a good and readily available test. Lessons. Numerologically the sum of ones birthday is called The Elemental AER: the Wind that Blows you (in a particular direction). This path of your life is filled with your personal and particular life lessons. Being a druggie, drunk, having a parent that beat you, or developing a condition are all examples of lessons. The path is not a mistake or a bunch of people to blame or for you to use to cop out. All are lessons that you need to learn. If you murder you die. If you are caught stealing, you must pay back. If you hurt, you must be hurt. There are no mistakes. This planet is a 48 Transectional. It is a place of Magic: cause, effect and Access. If you do nothing about what you read here your planet will eventually be gutted on schedule.

Manic Maniac

She obsessively washed her hands over and over. She couldn't get the dirt off of them. The bathroom was as a lake. Water was everywhere.

As she started jousting, eliminating the clogging, numbing and mucous causing substances from her diet, the more Sensitive she became. After the third day of Jousting she went to the bathroom and had a slight urge to wash her hands. DisIntegration took place. She was back in the Nazi concentration camp and felt the dirt and ugliness. From that point on she no longer had to wash obsessively nor excessively. She had been a prisoner in her last lifetime. She had apparently "no"-ed the dirt, making it a hatred or short circuit, a "love" programme that she seems to have Really perfected. "love" programmes are distractions. They are used to pass the time of day. When your Reality is not so pleasant the thing that the beast does is to get "love" any way that it can: "no"-ing what is handy, then filling the mind with an on going re-defining of Reality into a place of "love." You might say that she came to "love" the dirt, for whenever she felt lonely, she would "no" the dirty feeling of her body. This incessant "no"-ing, followed by emoting, coloured her grail. She died suddenly at the mercy of her captors. She did not have time to accept her death. At death her holy preserved this and all the colorations of that moment. When this holy chose another grail with which to unite, all of this coloration was transferred to this grail at first breath. It just took Acceptance to balance out the coloration of the holy. The same way you must become Aware of the activity of your RMAA, so too is your true-self or grail wanting to be loved. This girl was able to Access her grail for the first time since she was two or three years young, once she Wilfully shut down her RWAA via jousting, allowing the imprisoned true-self protected in the dungeon of the Castle-unConsciousness to emerge during short periods of Will.

Insensate

You can tell when a person has thoroughly perfected the Tertiary Root of evil. They are numb. Such a person lives in their head. They often say little externally. They are listless, and what few responses that anyone can extract from them are generally half spoken sarcasm's or negative redefinition's of the happenings around them. They have a chip on their shoulder. They affect a sullen attitude. They don a suit of armour that is coloured and affects that of a victim. It does not matter if they are wealthy, well fed, beautiful and healthy, for this is an act. They become misery instead of being Will.

I have been asked if a certain person such as this is spiritual, for they seem unemotional. They are in fact outwardly unemotional for they are only affecting misery, playing at being the victim. The moment they talk or are asked an opinion, they wear so blatantly their suit of armour, that one can readily sense that they are in fact very Asleep. They are so robotic, so expert at intellectual conjuring that their RMAA's suit of armoury is hugely encumbered and so, encumbering. They wear an emotional attitude of pouting, brooding and they may even sulk. They are doom and gloom because they are trying to do the "loving" thing, yet they do not wish to hurt or involve anyone else in their "love," for they have come to feel that their activities are negative, unacceptably so. They do not Realise that they are just trying to "feel" "loved," so do not know how to remedy their dilemma. There is a foundation, a need for Real touch-love, but being the expert liar and "no"-er, they or rather the RMAA that rules them at a given time, denies this need, furthering their immersion in their Dream Keep. A Keep can be either a sanctuary or a prison. "Womb" starts out as a safe make-believe haven, but soon becomes a gaol. Eventually it becomes a tomb, for it becomes so perfected that it denies the individual Access to FORCE. Such defences and the conjuring of this Dream Keep requires so much energy and concentrated effort that the animal expends all available life-Force, thus oft times resulting in death. Because this is a long and sophisticated string of programmes built of the Original ones or Roots of evil, the Pavlovian Pervert, a conditioned beast, cannot find its way clear of "its" programmes, despite the results of remaining imprisoned and its subsequent demise, of which it hasn't an inkling.

It is very difficult to get through to such a person, for every attempt feeds "its" "love" programme. Every attempt becomes the "no" that its RMAA uses to act as *Stimulus*, so consequently no one can make any suggestion. If that RMAA is equipped with armoury that is proficient at making money or Accessing sustenance, there is a likelihood that despite its anti-social programming ("no"-ing everyone and everything while remaining in "love"), there is no way that such a beast will try any other technology, or listen to any advice on the subject.

Such a beast only senses a simplistic existence. One that is grossly unReal and eventually fatal.

Freudian “love”

Search for the romantic “lovers.” If you find a couple, whether they be Homo- or heterosexuals, that have lived and “loved” together for twenty to fifty years, study these. They have a well developed degree of Acceptance. But this is tempered with a set of “love” rituals that they re-run incessantly. Many of these have created their own “love” Scapes that they together enter when the appropriate situations come about or are fabricated by the couple.

One such couple may talk baby talk to initiate this Scape. In affect they enter a pretend world wherein they are two children playing together. They decide that they are in the play or make-believe mode so they do not take anything they say seriously. In this way they are very Accepting. In many cases they shift and are in fact allowing more simplistic versions of their “selves” to rule their grails.

Another couple might play-out this role of the cheated on wife and then alternate so that the man would accuse the wife of cheating, which would end in great sex. This couple may have grown-up on what is called Country Music, which has as its predominant theme the idea of disloyal Freudian “love.” Everyone, is always cheating on, and breaking the heart of everyone else. “no”-ing is the basis of all these ballads.

For example Joe Emily and Harold always feign and jokingly pretend that each is potentially looking around for someone new, but actually they just use this as an excuse to emote and to be “romantic.” By doing this the couple have remained teenagers in regard to their coupling for over forty years. As long as they can continue to run and re-run their “love” rituals they are going to be able to remain coupled, re-living their youthful “love” programmes.

Basically these rituals work like this. One spouse does a “no.” He or she waits for the *Response* and then it comes. This is a “no,” which elicits a *Response*. Both Pavlovian Perverts have received the required “no” as *Stimulus*, so both *Respond*, and then both emote. The couple has a degree of Acceptance for they await as their spouse plays out its interactive “love” ritual. They exhibit patience, discipline and understanding, despite the fact that they are definitely in a TRANCE state, which they both enter autonomically yet willingly. In this way they find love through “love,” for they have Accepted their situation and are one or rather two with it. Acceptance is the most important result of this “love” ritual. Their emotings during the re-running of “love” programmes is limited, a game. They exhibit a limited degree of seriousness and this ritualised “no,” being “for fun,” limits their emotings.

One couple that has been together for over twenty years screams, shout and even batter each other on a regular basis. This sort of behaviour is conducted so ritualistically that they are very matter-a-fact about the entire process. If you try to intercede they both take offence to your attempt, for understand that this is a “love” programme, very intimate. A wife was being slapped and a fellow went to stop the husband and the woman told him to piss-off. While this seems absurd and irrational it makes perfect sense to a “no” programmed beast-of-the-field, for it is true “love.”

Another couple was re-running a “love” programme, which involved a shouting match. He was berating her and intermittently slapping her. She was crying and yelling back to keep the “love” ritual going (not unlike Grande opinion. She kept saying the same phrase and continuing invoking the same response from him. Her tears helped to deflect his slapping I noted, but that side of her head looked very red. They seemed to like my attention to their Natural “love” Scene. I absorbed their emotings, but not to an aggressive degree. The secret is to moderate Absorption with patience. If it began getting out of hand I could draw them down to exhaustion once atoned to their emoting. After the ordeal was concluded the two participants are matter-a-fact about their actions. They appear satisfied, not unlike two “lovers” after having sex: exhausted but satisfied.

Many people are very loving/Accepting, yet they have ritualised the re-running of their “love” programmes in a way that creates little disruption in the Consciousness of their planet. What these “lovers” do is shift their programmes like clock work from whatever they are doing to the ritual of “love” that they know so well. It is much like the ritual involved with going to work in the morning. The participants know only too well what the outcome will be and so all they need to do is re-run all the steps necessary to accomplish the task. If

everything re-runs like clockwork there is a Real chance that they Accept their situation. The moment they want more “love,” and do not Accept their quota of ritualised “love,” then this is what results in misery, for their ruling RMAA knows how to elicit more “love.” All that “each” has to do is concerte from surrogates or sift Reality for something to “no.”

To watch people who have ritualised their “love” programmes to such a degree of Acceptance is interesting, for their shift, when entering the environs of spouse, are pronounced and readily discernible, intimate and exclusive and so exclusionary of others.

Functionality

Real Sexual Attitudes Means...

Ideally if everyone Realised that Acceptance of Force was only possible via universal Acceptance, then this would result in an entirely different culture. Of course, if there were no “no” programmed people on Earth, this too would greatly change the coloration of your planet.

Hypothetically, if a man loses his wife, shouldn't you take him into your loving home. If enjoying sexual love with a woman would replace his sense of loss, shouldn't such affection be offered him?

If your wife's sister loses her husband, wouldn't requiring that your husband exclusively give sexual love and affection to you alone be selfish? Actually it is down right neurotic, selfish and insensitive. To deny anyone touch love is a throw back from a time that demanded a high rate of procreativity. Now such values and social norms hinder humankind's attempts at survival. If nudity, sexual love, and Real touch love are culturally no longer practised exclusionarily, then there would be no sense of adultery, less jealousy, and many of the crimes of lust would be reduced. Another aspect of early carnal knowledge free-associated is that people will less likely procreate to prove to themselves and others their maturity, or whatever else they can rationalise: doing the no of pre-marital sex and then bearing the child so as to be assured of the “no” of guilt. Also, rape could become almost unheard of, for what drives a person to rape, but (“no”) denial of sexual free-association and a need to have power over another human? Rape, serial killing, abuse, vandalism, “self” abuse, so many things are imagined by society to be a product of some nebulous nonsense (a devil). Now that you have knowledge of the programmes I call the Roots of evil, you can see how the beast functions and this will demystify many of the “excuses” for people's “sick” or culturally unacceptable activities. Remedies are simple. Yet culturally unacceptable, so you must change your culture.

The most important reason for touch love is
that such Real Physical Love stops the re-running of “love” programmes.

This eliminates bestial, unConscious exudation of
evil.

Mormon's, during their pioneer days as they settled portions of the western territories in the United States of America, often found themselves in a situation whereby a group of settlers would start out as families: husband, wives and children, and as the trip progressed shortages of food, catastrophes due to bad weather, and fights with Indians resulted in a disproportionate loss of males within many of these families, which would have left quite a large number of these families husband-less. In the task of settling new territory, leaving so many families lacking a male member would have certainly meant death for many of the survivors of the Trans-Continental trek. Consequently the Mormons began a practise of polygamy. For this was the responsible thing to do under the circumstance. I just would like to interject here one thing. America touts freedom of religion in its Constitution. Yet, marihuana, a sacrament for some people is outlawed. There are those who have as a basis of their religion polygamy, and this is disallowed. This is the result of “no” programming. You animals state one thing and deny it in the next breath.

Moslem's, too practise polygamy. They see it as the most responsible way to handle the Reality that there are as high as thirty-two percent more females that survive to procreative age than males. There is the lemming-process statistic of course: homosexuality, war, diseases, etceteras that may further leave a lot of women without love. There are many women that are not at all sexual, but that should be loved and should be afforded the security of a large group, coven, extended family, tribe, or whatever you wish to call this societal unit. A person can be loved, hugged and held without it being sexual. Certain people for whatever (what you call Karmic) reason, must experience homosexuality. Accept it, it could have just as easily been you, whom will need to Accept it next lifetime. I am not judging polygamy as right or wrong, rather I am suggesting freedom and rights, and consistency in laws. Laws after all are attempts at Wilful re-balancing acts.

Six, the number of communion, family, love and community: responsibility is a most necessary experiencing, and is in fact the only means for acquiring sufficient life-Force in most cases. I say most cases

because some people have a sufficiency of six's in their vibrations but lack seven's (I am referring to numerological configuration) and so, while like every humanoid animal needing a personal group with which to interact in order to be required to remain in present Reality/Time, such a group can be a distraction for learning to Accept and Absorb life-Force, i.e. being quietly alone, for some (very few). However the way to Ascension, generally speaking, is to pass from being a (four) beast of Eorthe, into (five) a Sensual and Absorbing being, to a loving and communing being (six), and then to an energised or power filled being ready to raise an Octave (seven). Many students could Ascend but do not, simply because they want to game. Eight is extraneous, for it is Eorthe Magic (an individual's endeavour). Many become good in these endeavours and fall deeply in love with their Mother Eorthe, and then wish to help humankind. Others get attached to Power, or "Drunk on Power." These beings always find it fun to play (nine), but not to be side tracked, but merely to express the correlation of developmental dispositions (humanitarians-helpful in an inquisitive manner – never emotionally involved with mere beasts).

The present institution of marriage, as a mechanism to manipulate a dumb animal to improve its rate of procreation, was useful and necessary. But such exclusive sex is also exclusionary. Every human being has a responsibility to every other human being. How much time is spent obsessively intellectualising/ dreaming about sex? How many people are left unloved in order that adherence to these mating practises and laws remain upheld?

If carnal knowledge (upon request) and Reality (nudity were more often practised and Accepted) were allowed to be free-associated by those growing from childhood into adulthood, then sexuality would not grow into such a monumental preoccupation (nor would there exist huge impersonal populations). Acceptance/ freedom/ free-association must become the norm if individuals of your kind are ever to collect enough personal life-Force to Ascend, or become members of void.

ADVICE: If you have a child you must allow it to free-associate. Sexual knowledge should not be any different from other knowledge, for if it is, then unRealness and imbalance will develop. Only upon request by a child should parents offer all the knowledge and even physically show the child if he or she requests this of them. This should always be done in mixed company, openly and matter-a-factly. If the child wishes to be shown physically what is done, sexually initiated, so be it. Understanding birth control and responsibilities are important of course so that further sexual relations with peers do not result in unwanted pregnancies. Birth control methods should be discussed and decided upon. Knowledge, communication, affection, free association, openness and Acceptance are Real, whereas ignorance, restraint and denial can only contribute to unReal problems. Whether a child request initial carnal knowledge of a relative or close friend matters little. The fact that the child is open and loving and feels able to request the company of that friend or relative is everything. The climate of the culture and family in which the child is raised shouldn't colour or distort Reality making sex different, precious, unspeakable or restrained in any way. When this is the case, well look around you... There is rape, unwanted pregnancy, poverty, famine, war, abuse and neglect, all of which results from the present oppressive cultural attitudes concerning sexuality. If members of a marriage openly have sex while in full view of their children, then sex will be free-associated. Children will not become convinced that sex is special or exclusive or dirty or bad. Real love, Real touch, Real sexual love should not be inferred to be exclusionary.

Also the practising of exclusive/ exclusionary sex and love only works to increase populations and to cause disharmony. If you are raised in a Castle-unConsciousness where there is only a father and a mother (king and queen) and sex is forbidden, then this results in a perverted idea of love or what I call throughout this text as "love." All motivations within such a Pavlovian Pervert is not supplied in the individual by the growth of personal power or Will but rather by the incessant dreaming that such a Pervert does. All that "it" does is done to earn the attention of past bairn attendants. If love was free-associated instead of attention earned, "love" programmes would never have had to be devised, and the RMAA never would have been devised. Instead ones holy would remain (whole) with ones grail in a state of Holy Grail.

Presently, wives and husbands symbolically become surrogate bairn attendants due to the perfection by their "dreamers" to imagine and hallucinate the personal environment and concerte this personal environment to play certain roles: manipulating these to "love" "them," interact with them, as did the king and queen of the

castle in which they had been trained as they physically grew up. I say ‘physically grew’ because despite their physical growth Castle-unConscious people remain, until the day they die, ruled by mere children trying desperately to remain safe within these Dream Keeps surrounded by imagined, and familiar bairn attendants.

Free-association is very important. Becoming unReal results from environments in which a child is not allowed to or is kept from free-associating. I repeat this because it is that important. If a child is denied learning that it is responsible for its own actions and after burning or maiming itself it is *Reward*-ed then it will throughout its life practise the re-enactment of this the Secondary Root of evil. If sexuality is restrained, then sexuality too will become the domain of unRealness: one more thing practised in a dream state, done unConsciously, robotically re-enacted in order to elicit “love.” Real people, people that are good at dealing in Reality are those that were not hindered or impeded in any way from freely interacting within Reality. Always remember that emotions and emotionalism are dream inducing, and that dreamers only function well in their own dreams. These become legends in their own minds: egotists or imprisoned martyrs.

This brings to mind old men and women, raised in cultures that manipulated them to procreate like rabbits, that can only imagine how good at sex they’d be if only given the chance again. These imagine that they would be great at sex, when actually and more importantly they would be good at love, Real love now and forever, if they had learned to free-associate. I have noticed how easily people are devoured, who do not know Real love. Because sex and love are confused in these individuals, consequently they receive FORCE from neither, when they should freely receive from both if they were Real. Unfortunately they have no choice only programmes.

If, when one Accepts/ loves them, then their life-Force could freely flow into these long restrained animals in tremendous flows. One need only Accept this, latch onto It and draw upon It. After long periods without love, these people store up such an abundance of life-Force in symbology that they emote it readily. This results in crying, hating, becoming sentimental (with a bent toward martyr misery), becoming enraged, etc. Emoting. These individuals will be walking in a dream state recalling a story, TV show, play, book or a portion of their lives and they will start emoting: discharging huge amounts of life-Force. This soon results in their death. A person could choose not to do this, but first they must not “love,” they must stop re-running “no” programmes unConsciously and imagining the *Stimuli* for “love.” Instead they must just Sense and allow Acceptance of other being’s love/ life-Force.

CHAPTER 15
To be unNatural

The process of laying siege your Castle-unConsciousness involves, what many students, who normally are running “no” programmes incessantly initially complain of as being called upon to do things unNaturally. The strategy of denying a RW(M)AA from doing what “it” normally does unConsciously, robotically, seems to the student as being unNatural. True enough, yet the entire endeavour of reAwakening is to deny ones bestiality, or to put it another way, it is an effort to control Consciously ones autonomies.

If you wish to lay siege your Dream Keep there are a huge bag of tricks to use. Throughout this book, I have given you many of these, but were you sufficiently wilful to pay attention to what I was telling you? Wilful. I have made this book repetitive and used strange vernacular and obtuse sentence structure to compel you to practise and develop your Will. Analogously your speech has a great deal to do with the design of the suit of armour(y) of each of your RW(M)AA, as does “its” posture or lack thereof, “its” facial expression, the spring in “its” steps or lack of it, etc. Your RW(M)AA are but actors acting out roles that each RW(M)AA (was taught) devised to act out in your or rather “their” endeavour to elicit attention from bairn attendants.

This is why I call these preconceived conditioned responses programmes instead of programs. These are programs but to stress the point that they are programs that are previously devised; I use the term for a pamphlet used to introduce a night’s performance, thus programmes. For each conditioned response was previously devised and each of these is the performance of an actor playing a role to elicit the attention of an imagined and recalled bairn attendant. A person with Will free-associates and remains in Reality and so reacts in a relevant manner to a constantly changing environment.

Each bairn attendant interacted with you differently and in response to these differences you developed a separate robotic-man (or woman)-at-arms to deal with these “Womb”-ers or touch-lovers: bairn attendants or parents. As each RW(M)AA grew and developed “its” sophisticated suit of armour(y), you fell further and further Asleep, more and more inSensitive. Understand, that is how the armour is maintained, selective sensory deprivation. As you met other people you did not develop more RW(M)AA but merely relied on those RW(M)AA developed in your childhood, for as “they” became more sophisticated/ you became more Asleep and unReal, “each” became an expert hallucinator, conjurer, most unReal yet very Natural. This Natural or Pavlovian-ness is just the thing that Keeps you in Dreams (intellect). Each RW(M)AA has a personality and is a personality. This has been developed and sophisticated through the years of your life with ever more encumbering plates of armour and an ever growing number of “love” accessing weaponry. For you to deal with the people around you in a Real and relevant way, you must be able to Sense them. Presently you Sense little or nothing for your RW(M)AA do all your Sensing via the filter of “its” armour. Unfortunately “each” wears a suit of armour whose visor is a sort of filter or autonomic distorter of Reality. Each RW(M)AA only sees its recalled bairn attendant so you must Physically (deny Autonomies), Spiritually (deny Emotions), and Mentally (deny excessive Intellectual processes and rationales) control (be Aware of) R(W)MAAic activity. Try very hard and conscientiously to SENSE what and whom is before you. Your RMAA is so used to having and keeping “its” own unique Dream alive and you numb and Asleep in order to make this possible, that it requires a great deal of WILL to deny a RW(M)AA “its” acts, actions, facial expressions, posture, bent, etc. Understand that at the Root of all your desires is womb, a womb before ever there was fear or trauma. This is the main function of membership in a coven, for you are a tribal creature, which needs Real touch-love. This must be ever accessible and should never be with only one “Mommy” or/ and one “Daddy.” It must be with all and any one of your coven. The sense of it is touch/ womb. The toucher and hugger of the moment should be empathic, Real, yet a mere womber. Understand that as an Homo robotics grows older and remains re-running “love” programmes, it becomes more unReal and thus it emotes more easily. So it devours its life-Force more readily. Emote not, hug and Absorb.

You must become a student of Homo robotics in order to intimately learn its mechanical-ness, so that you can know how to deny “each” RW(M)AA “its” “love” rituals and routines, then you will have “its” attention (by simplifying “each”), and eventually you will acquire such love, acceptance and appreciation for and from your RW(M)AA that “each” will do your WILL rather than owing “their” allegiance to bairn attendants who no longer exist, or exist only out-of-(present)Time, which is where the RW(M)AA take you with every task “they”

perform. This mechanism of the “self” has kept “its” activities secret from all but a few of humankind. You now have joined the few. But will you develop Will and demand fealty of “each” “self”?

Speech is a big part of your RW(M)AA’s natural act. To speak in a way, even with an accent, but more with an attitude, different from that normally used by a specific RW(M)AA is an effective way to deny a RW(M)AA its suit of armour(y), for it takes quite a bit of will to maintain, hours on end -even for days, this act. How a RW(M)AA talks is unique for the specific RW(M)AA or the specific time frame “it” goes to in performing a specific task.

For instance let’s say you go to work. To get to work you drove a car. The RW(M)AA that knows the dexterity of driving may be the same RW(M)AA that rules you at work, or “it” may not, but even if “it” is the same one, it may be doing driving in a different time frame (utilising a programme devised at sixteen rather than rocket science at twenty three) and the imagined bairn attendant that “it” pretends it is mirroring or performing the task with or for may have its “self” worn a different attitude. Let us say when your RW(M)AA learned to drive it was fun or an act of freedom, then every time you drive you again enter such an attitude. During the drive to work your RW(M)AA that is the rocket scientist is called forth because the “driver” is so good at what it does in the dream state called driving. The “rocket scientist” anticipating the job where a disciplining and demanding and scowling “Daddy” may be awaiting “it” is wearing a frown and ready to answer “Daddy” while donning a fearing attitude (mirroring Dad’s emotional attitude). The “driver” wants your attention so “it” pulls out a programme called “drive badly- oops” programme. By paying attention to driving the “driver” senses love and attention. Shortly the idleness of driving is replaced by the “no” or worry of work once again as the car pulls up to ones place of work. The work programme involves frowning and impatience, worry, even dread and a desire to be “reprimand-word-touch-loved.” The boss interacts with you or rather with “it” and you sense the attitude of your RW(M)AA and decide to shift “it” or to STOP “its” world of Asleepness.

The Fool is a Tarot card that comes to mind. It has a bag of tricks and it is considered both the 0 and the 21 or actor. By instituting a Conscious new brogue, your RW(M)AA can become disorientated. This will help you discover that you can shift RW(M)AA at WILL. If and when you discover that you are in TRANCE because you are wearing a scowl or are tense, then shift. Your speech alone in many cases can effect this shift. You can shift into present TIME and focus your attentions there by entering-Champion. How you speak, talk, stand (posture wise) can shift your RW(M)AA or dissolve any one of “them.” As far as wearing a frown: if you are poor you will not be reading this book. If you have money for food or are even on welfare in the United States of America you are rich, have food, heat and comfort enough to have a good life, actually. ACTUALLY. The PRESENT TIME Really is then not bad at all. It is only in your imaginings: past dreamscapes where you are acting out misery and anticipating the “loving” disapproval, for you were taught to “no” to initiate a bairn attendant to run over to you and touch-love you. Your RW(M)AA are motivated by that same desire and if you merely SIMPLIFY and pay attention to “each” as “it” performs “its” different re-enactments, you will have a loved RW(M)AA, and it will not have to crawl to the “no” to get your attention, nor the attention of any surrogate. A frown would only be Real if there was a guy with an electric cattle prod near your genitals, otherwise stop living, anticipating or imagining a “no.” Smile. You merely must be attentive, AWARE of what you are doing and the way you are doing it, every motion and every movement in order to be a resident of Reality. Controlling speech is another act of Will and can be part of the accoutrements of enter Champion.

In group study fellow students tell each other when they sense that another student is in TRANCE/ “Womb.” Are those in your group wearing a frown? Some such study groups just hug each other when enTRANCEment is noted, for recall the lesson taught some years ago by the tale of sleeping beauty: it was a kiss that awakened her. Touch. A Hug, a kiss, a squeezing of the arm, for these are Real.

The attitude intoned in your RW(M)AA’s speech, the way you walk, stand, your or rather “its” body language; all is involved in maintaining your Asleepness.

If you are an inhabitant of northern United States of America and force yourself to talk with a southern accent or visa-versa, you WILL deny your RW(M)AA one of the strategic parts of “its” Dream Keep. Then if you fill your day with smiling instead of frowning, still more of your RW(M)AA’s suit of armour(y) will be denied. If you also deny “it” imPatience still another portion of “its” roborosis WILL you deny “it.”

Another act of Will would be to deny Dreaming when you go to bed. Awaken the moment you sense that you are dreaming, for dreaming takes place after the healing part of sleep, and feeds your utter nonSense, re-empowering a RW(M)AA.

Here's a bit of new knowledge. When you go to bed and enter deep sleep your Dream Keep is shut down. Your RMAA have no *Stimulus* with which to interact to initiate "love" programmes. During this period your Holy can reunite with your grail, as was the case at first intake of air before the beast was trained in its robosis. In this situation holy can repair your body or in order to instigate a SHOCK to your body your holy may direct your grail to continue to sleep, work, eat, stand, walk in ways that cause health problems so as to require you to pay more attention. Once you begin to dream your RMAA, again reign and push your holy away and then you awaken from your 'lay down and sleep' time under the TRANCE state of one of your RM(W)AA, thus re-imprisoned.

Your grail or body was chosen by an holy. You might call the holy a soul. Soul is not you, rather you (that body) are chosen by holy (a Soul). The holy cares little about you, except in regard to holy acquiring enough experience, i.e. FORCE, that will enable It to Ascend. The holy results from the acquisition of sufficient life-Force/ WILL that it became a force in the void. It may be of Earth or from elsewhere originally. Your (grail) body has a force or is a sum of cells and their magic or use of transformation of matter and energy, yet when a holy chooses a body it becomes subject to the will of that holy. As that body dies its grail leaves the body and becomes part of that holy. Because of this symbiosis it is helpful and desirable for there to exist a state of HOLY GRAIL. At this point the Grail is directed Consciously by Holy to experience what it needs to so that the Holy can become complete. Many vernaculars try to stress the fact that holy and grail is inseparable, yet they are not. You being an Homo robotics they are inseparable until death. For beings like myself, whose Consciousness is complete enough to Will the assumption of Will over any grail, these bodies are mere vehicles.

In numerology there is a vibrational balance, the Law of Octaves: seven notes with two shock points, a balancing scale of nine points. In certain places this is called a Jed. And a female judge is called a Jeda while a male Jed is called a Jedi. Here they were called Ladies and Druids. The holy is a scale, a balance and it must be balanced and complete by its vibrational acceptance of FORCE. Holy is here to learn intonation: to vibrate in the same tune as GOD / FORCE. Learning and practising Magic: 8 and eventually to raise the Octave.

Take for instance the VERY necessary SHOCK of having Lincoln shot and killed by a Mr. Booth at Ford's Theatre. Lincoln's promise to those who seated him was that all ex-slaves would be deported at the conclusion of the war, freed as it were. Johnson knew nothing of this and was made quite paranoid to assure that he would not go through with what later became Monrovia, and many of the members of the group that paid for Lincoln's election altered their stance for the same reason South Africa has never pushed the Black African out of South Africa: cheap labour. The African knows of the vibration of Earth ("they sure have rhythm" and have enriched your lives with their knowledge of intonation, although this ability of converting sublime-attitude into sensual music often is direct reading of base exudations, instead of envisioning-intonation: music that changes man into human, from Homo robotics to Homo sapiens). The White, Red Race and Black communion took place in America as it did earlier in Egypt after the break up of Atlantis to make a Greening and flourishing (the Islamic salutation to GOD: white, red, black and green). Look at the African, it is so earthy and one with the base laws of this planet that the first chance it got to kick the interesting tool making White men out of their Dark Continent, they took it. In most parts of Africa things are returning to normal; back to the system of subjugation or/ and extermination. African slavery supplied early colonial Americans with their cheap labour. Do not indulge in judging the African's system of living, for they are not the ones strangling this planet with pollution. Industrialisation has very little to do with Ascension, and in fact can be a hindrance, for look how readily available it has made the 'forbidden fruit' that feeds your intellectual conjuring mechanism. You White men were raised in the harshness of cold so that you would develop an over inflated sense of community, which increased wordiness, an over large dreaming/ envisioning apparatus and a tool making society that enabled you to survive the cold. We had a hard time getting you to survive and so we heavily manipulated you toward the day when you would make tools such as buildings, inclined planes, missiles, boats, bombs, math, rockets, etc.,

so that you could survive your planet's Periodicity (within the Cosmos) While Africans will remain your source and reservoir in the event that you do not succeed. Your development is just in time, too. (destroy no bombs-make longer range missiles) Understand that your development as tool-makers has sophisticated you to the point of near irretrievability in spiritual matters. This would not be so bad except that you rule and influence the values of more and more of this manufacturing concern for higher souls, for no longer is the planet disconnected and segregated by a lack of communication and transportation. You are but stupid guardians of this planet, yet your machines are now destroying it. The North American Indian experienced mass release, Ascension, when you came to America to be taught your lessons and began murdering your teachers, for they did not only know the Earth, but many had acquired knowledge of GOD and ACCESS to that force. The process of acquisition is facilitated by accompaniment, assimilation, osmosis, if you like, or monkey see and monkey do. So it was necessary that once we instigated the War between the States (it never was a civil war), we could not allow Lincoln to ship the Africans out as he had agreed to in order to get funds to run for president. It was important to keep African-Native American-Caucasian strain of humanoid linked, for all races must eventually assimilate (including the Orientals, one day) and adopt each other's valuable cultural as well as psychic assets. However vibrational awareness and the ability to exude it are not both inherent in any race, rather the former is, while the later must be re-learned. This is magic, balancing these Will-fully. Africans are the source, while Whites are farthest from the source. Whites have mechanical dexterity at the cost of their Spirituality or ability to Sense. But the Negroid race does not know how to Absorb Force, for they readily emote or mirror what they Sense, whereas the Caucasians know co-operation and foresight due to being raised for millennium in the cold. These two races along with the Red race must assimilate and Accept their differences.

China is a good example of what happens when one race of human beings remains isolated to ego-ise. When the Europeans were discovering the Americas in their small boats, China possessed an armada of ships that would have dwarfed them, which was dismantled by the Ming Dynasty that self imposed a quarantine on China. China was primed for expansion of an empire, but instead she turned in on herself destructively. In regards to "no" programmed beasts empires grow or die, but can never remain balanced. Pure races die off.

We were Lucifer, a group of mining engineers, for then your planet was to be a stopping point for (miners and exploiters) visitors from an empire that since dissolved. You were to become both dextrous mechanics initially and later, well that's another story. Because that empire dissolved (our caste' doing), you were left to your own devices, (& vices). We differentiated you into separate (antagonistic) races, trained you and manipulated you, but now, how you now develop, is entirely up to you. If you continue to use this conditioning to hurt others or to elicit attention by doing hurtful things (when incessantly re-running Pavlovian "no"/ "love" programmes), that is your choice (or lack of it - remaining Pavlovian Perverts). If you wish to Ascend you must stop exuding and begin to accept, absorb and horde FORCE. Again that is your choice. The working of magicks, which are unConsciously performed magic, learned/ taught, is natural and your legacy. Once the individual learns to do Consciously it leaves the Realm of bestiality: the first step towards Ascension. You might consider the, so called, Blacks in America are more or as much American Indian as African, for skin pigment and hair kinkiness are more predominant genes, yet the bodily appearance, particularly the facial aspects of many, more aptly named, Coloured People in America reveal the assimilation of Native Americans and more importantly their Spiritual knowledge. The term Coloured People is hopeful and should be more desirable, than Black, Native American or White, for to be Coloured is the Desired outcome, if you ever hope to reach us and the stars. Racism and racial differences must STOP. No more African American days. After all most of the Coloured People are dark skinned (pigmented) kinky haired American Indians. American Indians appear red because they are the man thing with the least amount of skin pigment.

The holy that attached itself to you (individually) at first breath generally is originally of your planet. This does not matter except to you, (pride) I suppose. The holy was driven out by the development of your robosis/naturalness. Only by Will can you deny your naturalness and eventually bend this Power to your Will; taking the beauty of the beast (grail or spirit of your animal body) and marrying it to your visiting holy (a

Consciousness made up of past Wilful life experiencings). Aren't you tired of your castle of repeated past dreamscapes? Wouldn't you prefer to Will the Sensing of Reality? Trust me, it is delicious!

By awakening from bedtime sleep the moment you sense that you are dreaming, you deny your RMAA that much reign. Understand that during sleep, after healing, if that was the case, your holy, being not tied to present time/space knows of and plots out its strategies of experiencings for the next day. Holy will, so to speak, walk you through the coming day, right down to the drink it had you stop for at the store because you were thirsty and then buy that lottery ticket, that is a SHOCK to your life. After Holy has run through with Grail the strategy for the day to come, your RM(W)AA, having had "their" engines started in receiving these plans, begin to dream, typically, utter nonsense, so awaken, deny them. Or you might try to control the content of your dreams. In either case Will is practised. As a child you absorbed, but lacked Will; you must endeavour to practise both. Forced awakening should be followed by yoga or Do-In, or any system of paradoxical Physicality, discipline and awareness that re-balances. These are correctly performed without any internal dialogue, which is what Physicality is, if you recall.

Conscious denial along with Conscious acts of Will and enter Champion will dissolve your naturalness (bestiality). Included in the bag of tricks for becoming Real is the use of will in fasting, while still working and exercising. Many people fast but the entire endeavour becomes a "no" programme. By disciplining yourself to do and fill your time with doing such as physical exercise and the requirements of daily chores your RMAA are simplified by denying their utter nonSense and utter nonsense. This act of will requires your grail to access FORCE directly. The same is true when you strictly focus your attention into doing the dextrous magic involved with the manipulation of a physical substance (without talking to your "self," nor fantasising, nor imagining). In either case, you must endeavour to dissolve "self" and its Dream Keep and let the sun shine in on you unNaturally. That is, unNatural for an Homo robotics.

Being "no" programmed beasts you respond well to my "no"-ing, like predictable animals? You will have to be wary of the short circuit that is the "no" of disdain. Particularly self-disdain. You must come to Accept your "selves" or RMAA, thus loving them. Only by doing so can you stop their utter nonsense and become Sensual, Real (demanding their fealty).

In siege mode you do quite well, but then your addiction to "no" is so great that you often or normally get hung up on "no"-ing your "selves." You readily play "their" games. This is usually where students have got stuck. They stop "no"-ing others, they stop their Asleepness and can enter Champion at Will, so if and when they lapse in Will/"self" attention, they end up "no"-ing a "self" within, and this loop can become endless, and thus devouring.

This is called swimming the mote, for they have removed or shrunk their armour enabling them to dismount or dissolve the Walls, but then they end up outside the Walls and in the mote, swimming round and round.

Out of a feeling of "love"-lessness they falter into Asleepness. Sometimes they even falter into the mirror image of humankind by the inspection of art forms: plays, dramas movies, etc. Their weakness comes from many rationales. "But it is great art!" Hogwash, it is a portrayal of the insanity of Pavlovian Perverts who have been trained, and who have spent a lifetime perfecting "no"-ing. But all are a result of a desire for Real love. This is why the coven is invaluable and very necessary. If you are getting Real love, possibly even sexual love from members of coven, then all the idiots in the world need not be sought except if and when you wish to game.

You Beasts "no" at the Drop of a Hat

The normal child of the industrial world, particular the American with its cable TV, video games, and computer games, learn readily what "love" is all about. They do this at such an early age that there is a growing problem in such societies. This thing called evil is being perfected at amazingly earlier and earlier ages. Children have all these examples of "love" portrayed in their media. They are bombarded with "no" and the process of exuding evil is so amazingly intense that they do evil readily. The problem is that children readily

mirror what they see in the media around them. Now with 200 hundred channels of “love” where they are immersed in “love,” they readily mirror that which they are bombarded. Crime is sky high and “no”-ing is practised and condoned. There is a complete breakdown in discipline, for turn the other cheek has become interpreted to the extreme of spread your legs and take it between the cheeks. In these mirror images there are no people that have taken their “no”-ing and the “love” programmes too far into darkness that are being punished. There are no consequences. Society is unstable because Magic is no longer taught: cause, effect and Access. Thieves and murderers have become the heroes of our dreams. The bad boys and girls are so cute, so fashionable. In schools you allow children to do anything with impunity. With each subsequent generation lawlessness will grow and grow until bedlam rules. I have seen you dumb beasts-of-the-field do this so many times. It is the history of your planet. Will you continue? It has become a landslide. I have told you that Acceptance is for the victim, not for the perpetrator. Forgive, Accept what beasts do and don’t emote, but the perpetrator must be punished, the laws of God must be upheld in regard to punishments. And if you don’t believe in God or gods and goddesses, I suggest that you teach and support the teaching of cause, effect and Access or Magic. This means the use of discipline in both the home and in schools. This means the punishment of criminals. This means public executions. This means use of the cane for under-aged vandals. Cause and effect and what it begets. Magic must be taught.

Understand that “no” programmed beasts must have example, they must have good reason to change. Criminals lose their rights once they neglect to uphold their part in their country’s Constitution. Animals, Pavlovian Perverts that have been misconditioned, who have learned to “no” in order to elicit attention or “love,” will do what comes Natural. Accept this. Real-ise this. Also Real-ise that in order for these animals to change their “selves” the most effective method is cause and effect. Pain, enforced discipline, making example of these and even public executions are practises that work for those animals that refuse to stop “no”-ing. Rebellion is “no”-ing. The beast that clings to the ideas and incessantly re-runs Pavlovian programmes in order to elicit “love,” must be given incentive to change or reason to acquire and practise Will over their “selves.”

Now if you do not heed my warning, all is lost. You will once again reduce your world to a dark age.

The Child That Is Being Natural

Fiona has watched the movies. She has watched others interact. She learned how to use Grande Opinion from her mother and father as they 'discussed' things. She saw how effective "no"-ing elicited attention. The bad guy or girl always got more attention than the good child in all the programmes she saw on TV. How many times was a person in the news pointed out as doing good compared to those doing bad? All the stories on the news were bad, about bad people doing bad things. After all that is how they got on the news. And all the movies are filled with people being bad. The bad one gets all the attention. No one ever tells a story about good people. All the pop-songs are about the bad that people do to one another. Being bad is good; it always gets attention.

I think that there should be news flashes on TV and radio when someone does something commendable. In fact there should be a law of overbalance. For every news flash of a negative nature, there must follow for a twenty four hour period one more good news flash than all the bad ones for the same period. Evening news would have to contain 1 percent more good news than bad. Also all news shows would have to start and end with positive notes or acknowledgements of positive, good and socially valuable noteworthy stories. The proof is in the making of the pudding. If you were not 97percent "no" programmed, your newspapers and news programs would not be 97% negative. Until you become Real, laws or guidelines need to be instituted to aid in the development of a (positive) Real society.

Fiona had always done the "no," for it worked so very effectively. Like clock-work she did bad things. To look at the child of 12 your first response was, "how sweet she looked." She was wearing pony tails with nice ribbons in her hair. She had a cute pink blouse. Her body was lithe and she wore this beautiful smile. She had good posture.

I was fixing up a broken old house. She came with a gang of kids. After that first day there were things vandalised and banana peels placed in very strange locations.

I thought it was the daughter of an acquaintance (his family was a manipulation for 6 generations down the time line of Earth), for she was very devious, which one of her "selves" must have been trained to believe. Later I watched she and her father interact and saw how they played: feigned aggression and Grande Opinion, the works. She would assume an attitude of a soap operatic wife or girlfriend and say something like, "You better listen to me or I am going to make you very sorry!" Then he would answer her, after assuming an aggressive and pugnacious attitude, "You better not make me have to come over there and teach you a thing or two!" Now there would not be any prelude to these types of statements, no story was woven, no elaborate build up. They would just play out this quick scene, sort of assume the position and then stop if her father hadn't the time. On the occasions when he wished to take the time, he would advance on her and wrestle with her. "How cute," is the normal response of beasts-of-the-field witnessing this ritualised "no"-ing, this re-enacted "love" programme. "How cute"...? It was just about as cute as watching Hitler's thugs gas the Jews in concentration camps. What a sick and mis-programmed humanoid. You creatures are ridiculous.

Fiona though was equally entertaining. Her first impressions were ones of "such a cute and nice looking creature." As time went by I figured who took a knife and sliced up my makeshift air mattress, who hid tools, who ate only a portion of a piece of fruit so the other kids wouldn't have any fruit snacks. As time went by I had to exclude her from this gang of children that came into my house to visit. All sorts of tails were told me. She threw a person's bike into the river, got caught stealing things. She often vandalised things. When I heard her stepfather caught her having sex with two boys in the schoolyard after school I thought this followed her bestial sequence. But this culture frowns on this, for it is a huge "no" used to elicit attention. The next one may be murder, for this too is frowned upon, so since she has done every other thing to elicit attention, and at such an early age, she may be running out of experiences to try in her RWAAic attempt at "love" elicitation. Only twelve and she knows how to nasty. Having sexual intercourse is normal for even a child of twelve that Realises

that such an act is a “no.” There is a bit of curiosity perhaps, but generally the motivation is the “no” in her case. She has perfected “love” and unfortunately so have many children at the age of twelve. Unless you give these beasts impetus to not do the “no,” then they will continue to do what they have been trained to do: perform the negative acts in order to elicit attention. I am all for the child free-associating Reality, but I hope someone has taught her about birth control and protection from diseases.

Dumb animals are retrained by punishments. Animals need a reason to reprogramme. Will: their own or surrogate bairn attendants. If they come to view physical punishments as mere “reprimand-touch-love” then they will have gone far into perfecting their “love” programmes. Pavlovian Perverts. Laws forbid the use of very physical punishments. Instead, all these mis-programmed creatures will be drugged and incarcerated. After years of their incarceration they may become bored with it and decide to change or do what they are told to do by authorities, giving lip service to their gaol keepers. Then they will be released and again re-run their “love” programmes. After many returns and millions of dollars they may get the point, but more than likely they will be locked so effectively in re-running the “love” programme that they end up dying in gaol.

At present America is Realising saturation. America’s gaols are filled and the cost of housing these mis-programmed beasts is overburdening the taxpayers. Luckily they have expanded their money printing operations, money that isn’t worth the paper on which it is printed. The planet is so saturated with these useless dollars. Lately they have decided to make these into columns of numbers in a computer instead of actually printing new stuff. What an endless sea. It is quite the slight of hand. Dreamers are easily fooled. Eventually the dreamers will out number the producers and then the dreamers will destroy the producers and the means of production. Over and over this scenario has been re-enacted in your planet’s past. Blind “love”: the utter destruction of everything in sight.

CHAPTER 16
Jousting
Introducing your Own SHOCKS

You cannot know the taste of a pear if you have never tasted a pear.

How can you know whether you wish to live in Reality, having utter Access to the FORCE, if you have never or rarely Accessed the FORCE and then only by the happenstance of an illness, intense life threatening situation or when under the influence of a drug or a bio-chemical quark of your body?

Access to Reality accompanies the development of Will. In order to Access FORCE
Acts of Will
Can be performed,
So that you can know whether bathing in FORCE is desirable.
All your life you have been perfecting the flashing of emotions.
You have developed an addiction to emoting.
This has Kept you imprisoned,
Earth-bound.

Jousting is a formalised act of Will.

Those people who are the most energetic, happiest, most fun to be around, are Absorbers, most loving, Accepting (do not emote). Acceptors. Most successful people are those individuals that normally spend a far greater part of their day in (present) Reality. Jousting is a method that can induce a person to Access Reality/ enter (present) Time in an ordered and predictable way. In Voiders' terminology: Jousting can dissolve the Walls of the Castle-unConsciousness. Jimi Hendrix once sang in his tune,⁷ If Six Were Nine, in his typical vernacular, "Castles made of sand melts into the sea eventually." Time/ Reality remains, it is the guise of your suits of armour(y) that clouds and sophisticates: "no"-ing Reality, making IT inAccessible.

Homo robotics is an animal addicted to emotions; strung out on the flashing of *Reward*,

| <i>Stimulus</i> | <i>Response</i> | <i>Reward</i> |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|---|
| "no" (in its many forms) | "touch-love" (in its many forms) | emoting (exudation of evil (as life- Force is released) in its many forms) |

a Pavlovian Pervert emoting unConsciously much as a dog salivates unConsciously as the delivery of food is suggested, yet not necessarily delivered.

Jousting is a method, an act of utter Will that disIntegrates the robotic-man-at-arms, and allows the grail ([true] self) to Sense Reality, dissolving utter nonSense. When you joust, it is your RMAA that you are jousting against, not the person with whom you joust. I have stated that here, but being an Asleep beast, addicted to emotions, incessantly trying to get "love" and attention from anyone that your ruling "self" of the moment does hallucinate into a "Daddy" or a "Mommy," you may forget this fact. Let me repeat. When you joust, it is your RMAA that you are jousting against, not the person with whom you joust.

When a task is performed such as tying the shoe, walking, standing (balancing) or perhaps grooming a steed, brushing your hair, sanding a board, doing mathematics, or typing a letter, these activities are done by a robotic-woman-(man) at-arms robotically. When such a programme is performed "it" does so by re-running / re-enacting / re-living the first time "its" suit of armour(y) acquired or devised the programme, which is a process that takes the person out-of-(present) TIME, into "Womb." Once the *Stimulus* or initiating symbology calls forth the specific robotic-man (woman)-at-arms to the parapet of the Castle Walls, the beast is on autonomies, the task is done unConsciously (so as not to bother the self). When a male dog urinates it picks up

⁷If Six Were Nine by Jimi Hendrix, from the album Axis Bold As Love ©1967, Yaneta Co. Ltd., Nassau Bahamas, c/o Clark Enterprises, Inc.

one of its hind legs automatically, re-enacting a programme it may have devised or may have copied from another male dog.

If the programme is a well devised one, or not, matters not to the bestial or man part of human. After the programme is completed and the robotic-man-at-arms returns to Reality to peruse it for another *Stimulus*, the human can then wonder why the programme was carried out, but unless the animalism can be observed, it can never be controlled nor can it be altered or re-programmed. A dog, recall, may salivate unConsciously when the delivery of food is suggested, despite the fact that there is no food in fact being delivered. One of a serial killer's robotic-man-at-arms may have correlated that to do a negative act elicited attention, so it figured that the worse act that a person can do would elicit the most attention, so it decided or was told the worse thing "it" could do is murder, so "it" murders. The original programme or first murder usually is a mistake, but once it is carried out the beast has a lot of "self-word-touch-love" and "self-reprimand-word-touch-love," which is so much like the cycle of "love" programming that it was taught as a bairn that it wants to re-enact this programme over and over again. Understand that the beast is (you are) addicted to "love," and every programme is "love." Tying an ("no") un-tied shoe. Zipping an ("no") un-zipped zipper. Killing an ("no") un-dead person. Once the programme of murder was *Stimulated*, not until it is completed is the beast returned to (present) Time. Theft, being accident prone, molesting children, showing your genitals to people on the street, vandalism, being good, working hard in school, making lots of money, selling vacuum cleaners are all programmes. Beasts re-enacting them, whether or not they are good, practical or bad.

However, if the programme is Wilfully enacted or a task is randomly chosen and to perform the task requires sufficient Will for an extended period of time, the robotic-men-at-arms get bored and then dissolve, for recall that they are but children (Matthew 18:3) with very short attention spans. "one" might go through its repertoire of "no" programmes and rationales via "self-word-touch-love"/ internal dialogue/ *self-Response* or distract the person with other things "it" imagines that the person needs to do or psychosomatically give the person a chronic ill or discomfiture or an itch or back pain or headache, but if/ when that person is so Wilful that he or she Consciously does not allow its robotic-woman (or if you are a male, then man)-at-arms' shenanigans; the little rascals give up and fall Asleep, and the Walls of the Dream Keep falls asunder revealing Reality to the *self* (eventually to self), sometimes for the first time in a person's life. Extend the period of denial and insights will be Realised and mis-programming can be dissolved. There are those people who daily return to or Access Reality by doing a task with intensity and Awareness. During and after such acts of Will such people are Aware, Awake and their robotic-man-at-arms is now their liege, they have demanded "its" fealty and "it" does obey. To do this yourself you must become Consciously of "their" existence and you must become Aware enough to observe what stimulates each specific robotic-man-at-arms and become Aware as *Response* is entered and can direct and control this *Response*.

Layers of suit of armour(y)

The outer or newer layers or plates of encumbrances are "no" programmes. As your intimacy of each RMAA increases by your awareness of each dexterity "each" performs, you will have removed many outer plates of "its" armour or encumbrances. This paying attention to these dexterities as they are performed is Real "self" love. Simplification of the "self" is the result. This removes huge plates of armour.

As for *Reward*, it must not be entered, you must not emote, rather you will be Accepting all FORCE when you are Real, in (present) Time, for then you are Consciously. By doing tasks in this way you can collect and store FORCE. Acceptance during the witnessing (disIntegration) of R(W)MAAic activity requires the Will to maintain the physical husk (beautiful armour(y) of Lancelot/ or cloak of Meredith) which involves a smile, perfect posture and a child's simplistic curiosity (Absorption). Witness (love) the RW(M)AA as it performs and "it" will perform perfectly for you (your witnessing *self*). And "it" then does not emote, for self, *self* and "self" becomes one, and self via *self* Accepts all the Force around it including potential emotings of "self."

This state is Acceptance/ Absorption. It is more Spiritual than any Church meeting, in fact most Church meetings are very Sleep inducing, for they are not Quieting the people's bestiality, rather they enlist the congregation to emote, with guilt, remorse, even self flagellation. Churches or temples exist to manipulate. The number of the temple is the same number of Eorthe Magic, money, pragmatism which is the number EIGHT:

manipulating the Four Eorthe Elements - man thing's number is four, merely one of the beasts that are made up of these elements. This is the LAW of Octaves. The Priest(ess) *Stimulates* the congregation to run and re-run "love" programmes by the "no" of sin, the group *Responds* verbally then this is followed by autonomic *Reward*: the release of life-Force by Emoting, (the exudation of evil).

On the other hand a truly spiritual group does not emote, but rather Accepts. The Druids, or rather a certain number of druids drove the peoples of the British Isles to the Church, for they saw a great need for an international language and a uniting of the people of Europe. Druids go by many names in many cultures. The Church of England has remained a Spiritual institution conducive to learning Acceptance. Unlike its mother church in Rome, the Church of England tends to leave ones soul up to the individual, whereas the Southern Church likes dictating and manipulating individuals and inducing Asleepness, emotionally. Still it is a place to manipulate, as are all temples. A spiritual person has no worry, though, for when you are Conscious you are one with your holy, Holy Grail exists within you and you know your path of experience that you must tread. Enough of this, back to jousting.

After Jousting or doing a programme in Acceptance by an act of Will, the person, who is an Homo robotics, is left naked in Reality, void of its robotic-men-at-arms and any of "their" suits of armour(y). Such a person, who practises various acts of Will that place them in Reality, instead of only extending its stay in Reality, soon allows the peace and harmony destroyed by one of its ranting "maniacs" as "it" reinstates "its" rein over the person's grail.

Jousting is a formalised act of Will that induces disIntegration of the robotic-man-at-arms that lands a student or knight of the round table smack dab in the middle of Reality, Accessible to the FORCE/ GOD. As a student senses that he or she is once again being taken over by a robotic-man-at-arms the student may choose to return to jousting in order to re-Access Reality and disIntegrate the robotic-man-at-arms' suit of armour(y). Eventually Reality will be Accessible without having to joust, in fact, Reality can become the student's normal residence (domain of beingness). It may take a while before you can become an Homo sapiens, one who lives in Time, but you will discover that enter Champion, entering Champion is enough to re-place you in Time/ Reality. Assuming the non-attitude (unemotional attitude) of Champion is eventually learned. Assumption of this stance becomes a matter of shifting at or in Will. Via jousting not only do you learn of Reality, but as you find yourself out of IT, and re-enter IT via jousting, you will come to know how to Access IT at Will. This is shifting. Jousting is the first lesson in Shifting. Shifting eventually can be perfected as the instantaneous travel through time and space. It is at a subatomic level, so bath after a shift, spatial shift (if you ever get that far) or you will look like a cue ball. Christian priests wanted to look like North European Druids to seem convincingly powerful to their congregations, so they shaved their heads. Hilarious, eh?

The Sensuality involved with being in (present) Time is delicious. As a student begins to Sense that which it has missed for years, it Realises that it can, by jousting, rediscover Accessing, which it did most of its youth: before the robotic-men-at-arms took over its body and sent the holy packing.

At first formalised acts of Will must be forced by the student, so that she or he can taste Reality and know how to Access FORCE. Eventually a student learns to do all tasks Consciously.

The FORCE bathes All, yet Homo robotics lives trapped in a Castle-unConsciousness that Keeps Reality at bay. There are correct ways to bathe, have sex, eat, walk, work/ play, stand, etc. and then there are the ways in which robotic-men-at-arms perform such feats unConsciously/ robotically. Notice you read 'work/ play.' Work and play become one, for every task performed is chosen as a game, performed by a "self," witnessed by the *self* in a state of Awareness and intensity.

As a student Accesses FORCE more readily it will demand fealty of its men-at-arms and "they" will do the Will of the student's Holy Grail of his or her birthing.

Kung Fu, Tai Chi, Jousting, Yoga, TM are all systems devised to bring a student to (present) Time. Unfortunately most people exercise or enter "exercise" programme period when performing any one of these various forms of paradox. Some even re-run the "no" programme throughout their exercise period, for witness the frown on their faces as they exercise. In the event that they do place themselves in Reality by Yoga, etc., when this 'exercise period' is over, they fall back Asleep once they go onto the next task. For instance, "it"

takes over with “no, I need to bathe, for I am (“no”) dirty.” Or perhaps, “I must prepare breakfast, for I am (“no”) hungry.” Or perhaps, “I must dump the trash, for the trash can is (a “no”) full and may soon stink.”

enter Champion is supposed to be used to extend ones time in a state of Accessing or smelling the roses, for Accessing involves an increase in Sensitivity, Sensuality and Absorption, which are actually synonymous terms to describe the state of being Real. As the student learns to enter Champion or Remember Thy Self, he or she shall Will Access to continue by dis-allowing the robotic-men-at-arms to re-man the Walls of “their” Keep without his or her Awareness and leadership.

enter Champion is like a ladder, a bridge, the number 8, the number of the Temple, infinity that you stand on end via pure and utter Will. You can do Kung Fu, TM, Joust all day, but never become a Magician or void master if you relapse into Asleepness. You must stop the worlds of your Asleepness at all times, not merely during the period of what you may call exercise, or meditation.

Four is the number of Eorthe: the Four Eorthe Elements, animals, man being one of these.

Five is the number of human, nomad, change, freedom, tolerance, adaptability .

Six is the number of Responsibility, family, coven, love, community.

Seven is the number of Absorption, Quietude, Spirituality.

Eight is the number of Magic, manipulation.

Nine is Humanitarianism, Completeness.

Being an hermit doing Kung Fu or any other form of paradox takes you to Five. It is Six that you must experience in most cases to Realise Seven and to go on to Access via the acquisition of the subsequent vibrations. Jousting is performed with others and allows the student to Realise the Six. (I say ‘in most cases,’ because a person that has many three’s (C, L, U’s), six’ (F, O, X) and no seven’s (G, P, Y’s) in its entire name would be helped by an act of Will of being a hermit, and inversely a person with lots of 7’s or few 3’s needs to acquire such experiences as mixing with other people and learning to associate with others.)

For a hermit who has learned to Access Reality, while excluding her or his fellow man; the moment that hermit interacts with another human (whom is part of Reality), whether they Realise it or not, Reality becomes inaccessible, for autonomically the person becomes the hermit’s master or mistress (mother, father or other recalled bairn attendant). This is due to the fact that as a child, bairn attendants were that hermit’s, external of the womb, touch-lovers or “Womers.” People the hermit happens upon unConsciously, call forth robotic-men-at-arms, whom are child-like. A hermit may be, in a small way, able to Absorb FORCE more effectively than most people. A hermit is generally at the stage of Five, which is Sensitivity. In order to Absorb readily it must allow the maturing of its true-self or grail, but this is not possible if All must be sensed through the helmet slots or other parts of a robotic-man-at-arms’ suit of armour(y), despite the fact that the hermit has removed vast amounts of armour(y) from the robotic-man-at-arms that at any given time may be animating it. Still he or she is animated by even very simple and more Real robotic-man-at-arms, it is animated just the same. The “selves” must become ruled/ loved rather than remaining rulers or “lovers” of themselves: conjuring a “Womb” (maintaining an illusion). The grail or self can only mature and become Real if and when the robotic-man-at-arms are ruled by *self*: when a person lovingly controls and is Aware of each robotic-man-at-arms’ activity. This is Response-ability: Six. Seven is Absorption. So hermits are at a stage of development of Sensitivity (Five), more Real than many people, yet the moment they find themselves in social contact, the hermit is once again a slave to its robotic-men-at-arms, once again imprisoned in “their” Castle-unConsciousness.

The Jousts are designed to foster interaction with others in your study groups (coven) or potential procreative coven. Unmistakably group dynamics can be identified when such learned methodology is revealed. I was in a meeting in a building where I was to get secrets, I saw such a former student of some Lady or druid, for I could See her stance (non-attitude). She was a vice president of the corporation I was to pilfer. She was basically jousting with her underlings. She had them mesmerised. Her intensity was amazing. I had to muster all my attention, for she had Access to all of these creatures of whom she was empathising. I was a vly (nihil) and thus went about my task. I am sure she Sensed something but was held in Absorption. I concentrated in Reality (present time) and was in and out of that computer and out of that building before she reacted.

You will discover that the moment you interact with another human after a long period of hermitage or Jousting, formalised or otherwise, that one of your robotic-men-at-arms, being “love” starved, will jump to “its” feet wearing “its” suit of numbing, “its” helmet of hallucination (or should I say hell-lucination), and go after attention by using its most effective and available weaponry. Danger, Will Robinson. Warning! This can be fatal.

Note: If you or a hermit carries on internal dialogue it is still Asleep, still maintaining a Dream Keep.

Beware hermit for “they” (your robotic-men-at-arms) grow thirsty and base and can come forth with a sure fire way to get “love”/ attention like perhaps a caustic remark or sarcasm for the hallucinated bairn attendant, person that you may happen upon. But what can be fatal is “self” maiming.

A hermit may discover how to Absorb from nature, but human exudations are huge sources of life-Force that the hermit may never know. Hilariously after months or years of the hermit’s way of life quite often the first thing out of the hermit’s mouth upon coming into contact with another human being may be acrid, hate filled sarcasm (a common “love” programme). Upon coming into the company of others, automatically antagonises the person(s) it happens upon, which *Stimulates* (elicits) disfavour from the person. This in turn gives that RMAA that re-ran this “love” programme good reason (or so it imagines) for being a hermit, and thus sends the hermit into hermitage once again.

A hermit can spend twenty years in Reality, even having stopped internal dialogue, having balanced by devotional meditations or other types of paradox, but the moment she/ he re-enters the Realm of humankind - Wham: sound Asleep, again. This is why you need to Understand what the mechanisms of Asleepness are and what Pavlov discovered about conditioned response. How it corresponds to YOU! The nature of the beast, that of an expert self deceiver, is the problem. I am talking about you, not the other person or someone else. YOU. This is why I repeat and repeat. I hope to get through your Walls, the Walls of your Dream Keep, for your “selves” loathe giving up “their” power over you. “one” will “no” the book, “it” will find anything else to do. “it” may destroy the book or lose the book. “it” may even give the book away, or throw it out.

If you try to lay siege your Castle-unConsciousness... this could be fatal.

Generally hermits don’t even progress this far, but they can. Hermits usually end up replacing bairn attendants with internal (or in many cases *self* external) dialogues: becoming their own “Womb”-er.

Appreciate your RMAAic ability to do physical acts of dexterity. Once you Access FORCE/ Reality by jousting you can then Consciously witness/ love your robotic-men-at-arms as each runs its programme of that moment; slowly replacing the Will of make believe, imagined and recalled bairn attendants with that of your own Will (the Will of *self*). Analogously, enter Champion allows you to have one foot in Reality while the other is accessible to the armoury of a given robotic-man-at-arms that has been called forth by the symbology attributed to ones personal environs (i.e. people, tasks, etc.), without being made more inSensitive by allowing that robotic-man-at-arms to don more armoury than is necessary to deal with the person or task at hand. This is called disIntegration. But if your love of the performing “self” falters, a more sophisticated programme “it” may re-run (one that is more effective in eliciting attention).

This is the lesson that Homo robotics was never allowed to Realise as a bairn, whereas coven children, Tribal-Conscious children, Homo sapiens learn in the course of their lives, for they are directed little. They are allowed to steer their own ships. They are allowed to Realise that they are in fact their own source: responsible for their own individual Ascension, rather than being some stupid Pavlovian Pervert, responding to *Stimuli* in a bestial manner.

So Six, people and ones interaction with them is where you must begin.

So Six is where you begin: to practise Jousting. The coven, 16 members (1 (self) via 6 (the tribe)) affords sufficient diversity in order to Realise. Try to alternate your jousting partners as much as possible.

Womb Joust

Two (or more) people seated opposing, close but never touching, one another, place hands on thighs, close their eyes and Sense or attempt to Sense where they are in that room or yard, where they are sitting. This should continue for at least twenty minutes perhaps longer, particularly if the participants are so will-less that they have a tendency to fall Asleep during the joust, or daydream. Participants are not to dream, daydream, imagine, fabricate, nor fantasise. Merely, “Be here now”: Accept.

This is one of the most important Jousts. And it can be difficult, for the tendency is to fall into daydreaming or even to fall Asleep. This one you can practise for hours. You stop the internal dialogue and wilfully concentrate on breathing and heartbeat. Try as “they” might, you will not give up Conscious control of your body to any of your R(M)WAA. Not for a second.

(Eventually you will *Understand* how to enter Champion and Realise disIntegration. You can do this Joust alone in bed upon awakening in the morning. After an hour or so stand up from bed or chair and slowly and quietly go about the task of living. Do not be in any hurry to give up complete and Conscious control of your body to a “self,” rather try to disIntegrate and **witness the doing of the task** by the specific “self” that has as part of “its” repertoire, the robosis to perform the task. Beware, remain simple and deny internal dialogue, which assures that the “self” will remain simplistic and as real as possible. You will remain Real enough to Absorb as you allow that “self” to perform, while you remain Conscious of the bodily activity.)

Silent Tilting

After having done the Womb Joust for twenty minutes to 2 hours the two or more jousters open their eyes and formally end the joust. After they go to the bathroom or whatever they need to do, the next joust is begun by mutual agreement. If you do it for only twenty minutes, the jousters should not take a break, but rather further extent their reign over their “selves.”

You both seat yourselves, palms rested comfortably on thighs again and look at one another: eyes focussed on eyes: perceiving the other (one other – if you are jousting with more than one) person. You are to Sense and Accept one another. That is all, so there will be no talking, fantasising, internal dialogue, winking at one another or recalling past “no”s in ones mind or in any way elicit attention from the person with whom you are jousting. Accept/ Sense one another only. Generally two hours of this joust will suffice. Often it is a good idea to ease into this by doing the joust for one hour initially, but eventually you will want to extend this act of Will. You will want to extend this act of Will simply because you like being Conscious rather than bestial. It is necessary or helpful if you have a president or director of your jousts to not only act as time keeper but also as referee, for he or she will decide if either jouster is breaking the rules. Quite often a jouster will fall Asleep or noticeably daydream. On some occasions one or both jousters may start laughing or fidgeting. The President is arbitrator, he or she stops the Joust and has participants begin again after they both say they are ready to do so. Even if a jouster is not guilty as charged of some infringement hardly matters, because emoting is done by Pavlovian Perverts out-of-(present) Time, which is the whole reason for doing jousting. Accepting the President’s call is a first step in acquiring Acceptance. Eventually you will acquire sufficient Will over your robotic-men-at-arms that you will be able to reach Access to Reality in but twenty minutes of jousting. Eventually you will enter Reality at Will: enter Champion the very moment you Realise that you have fallen Asleep. If a President has to stop a joust due to his/ her sensing an infringement in the rules (Real or imagined) then it is begun again when both jousters are ready to begin.

Quite often a jouster, being ruled by a robotic-man-at-arms will try to elicit the (surrogate bairn attendant’s) President’s or other jouster’s attention by noticeably lacking Will: closing eyes for more than a normal blink, being unable to sit still, itching an itch, moving a leg or knee rapidly (unConsciously), etc. If a person’s robotic-men-at-arms animates it and starts it laughing, crying, emotes imPatience, pretends to be mad at having to do the joust, then the President (or fellow jouster) will stop it, but all jousts must be completed and formally ended by the President. Recall that the entire reason to Joust is to unhorse your individual robotic-man-

at-arms or if you are a female human, robotic-woman-at-arms. Your bestial bodies can be viewed as the 'horses' (or horses ass) of these idiotic robotic-men-at-arms of yours. If it takes forty days and forty nights to demand fealty of your robotic-man-at-arms, so be it. No jousting may quit a joust out-of-(present) Time: emotionally stomp off. A joust is not a staring contest, but rather an act of Will against ones own bestiality.

To make this clear I will repeat what I have repeated. When a jousting laughs or falls Asleep or its attention seems to be other than BE HERE NOW⁸, then the President stops the joust and begins it when participants are again HERE NOW or are back in their attentiveness (when *self* has reclaimed Response-ability). A joust cannot be concluded if a participant keeps reacting (allows a "self" rule over him or her). Whatever induced the reaction must be repeated until the person can demand fealty of the RMAA that is reacting: re-enacting "love"/ "no"/ "Womb" programmes.

You may find that jousting is time consuming, however once a Tilt is commenced it may not be terminated until the President says that it is complete. This ending of a joust can never be decided by an emotional (dreaming) participant. Once you are both in (present) Time the Joust can be ended by mutual agreement and the consent of the President, if need be, but not until. (when your laughing or other emotional response no longer takes place due to the antics of the jousting across from you and your own RMAAic activity, the joust is considered FINISHED)

If you are fortunate enough to have a lifestyle that allows you to return to Joust once you sense that one of your robotic-women (or men)-at-arms have re-animated your grail and re-imprisoned it in a Castle-unConsciousness; the likelihood of your acquiring power over your robotic-men-at-arms and Wilful Access to Reality will be greatly enhanced.

Any act of Will is a SHOCK to your robotic-men-at-arms. Any SHOCK can Awaken you. Recall the activity of the holy when it returns to your grail, it guides you to experiences that it greedily needs to Complete itself and Ascend. If you are numbed by your robotic-men-at-arms the holy may choose to take you to life experiences/ SHOCKS that may be near fatal, so that your Awareness will be increased. Recall the 2x4 and the mule. (The vet struck the prize mule with a 2x4, which alarmed the owner- "now that I have his attention I will let him know that I want him to move," said the veterinarian to the owner.) If you can become your own 2x4 you can SHOCK your robotic-man-at-arms into Realising who is boss: eventually allowing Holy Grail to take place. Perhaps then you won't need to become a quadriplegic, confined to a wheelchair, in order to learn patience, or meet some other undesirable destiny. Jousting is just such a shock. It is very controlled and it is instigated by you instead of an outside Will, petty tyrant or bio-chemical quark.

Before going on to the Third Joust, Tilting, I want to remind you of the disposition of robotic-men-at-arms. "They" are but little children, who will try anything to have it their way. Each has a way unique from the "others." As you are seated, standing, typing, working/ playing, the robotic-men-at-arms that knows how to do the particular task and comes forth to do it is a little brat. The President of a Joust should stop the joust if/ when someone itches, scratches itself or appears to be unAware (Will-less). Many Jousting will refuse a robotic-man-at-arms, its grail to as much as blink an eye lid, which results in a stream of tears. Many of the things you, or rather your robotic-man-at-arms pretends "it" needs, it does not. Having a person itch may be all that is left to a robotic-man-at-arms whose host has decided to Joust, act Wilfully and thus Consciously. Do not be surprised if an itch is manufactured, an intense itch. (Even looking at a blank wall for an hour is truly an act of Will. Most people fall Asleep or enter "Womb" via fantasy after 14 or 15 seconds.) Your Will Be Done: you will soon demand fealty of your robotic-men-at-arms and stop "their" histrionics. Amazingly enough, the robotic-men-at-arms that may animate you initially during Jousting may pretend that the person with whom you Joust is an adversary, or competing sibling and by "no"-ing this adversary "it" has you accomplish the task.

Your robotic-man-at-arms may pretend that the President (director of the Joust) is a surrogate bairn attendant, whose attention can be elicited by doing a "no." This robotic-man-at-arms may be called forth by

⁸ Remember Be Here Now by The Crown Publishing Group, 201 East 50th St., N.Y., N. Y. 10022. 37th Printing Jan 1997 by Kingsport Press , ISBN-0-517-54305-2

such imaginings manufactured by a robotic-man-at-arms' intellectual aspect of it's suit of armour(y). The secret is the duration of the Joust, which bores the most persistent robotic-man-at-arms and disIntegrates "it."

The Silent joust can be carried on by yourself, alone. Actually it is how you will eventually Be. To spend your life in Awareness of all that surrounds you. To disIntegrate the bestial side of you and allow "it" to carry on necessary dexterities only, under your direction and via your love of "it," while you, your *self* & (true) self, remain in control. Remaining Real/ Aware and living with intense Conviction is how Homo sapiens conducts itself.

For practise you could choose 22 leaves and memorise them. You could practise walking and being utterly Aware of your posture, breathing pattern and what you are experiencing for hours on end (without ever carrying on any internal dialogue). Eventually this will be your own way of life. You will eventually Real-ise that you are Absorbing life Force from your surroundings and you may start to Sense in Reality forces and collective specie spirits of plants, and other creatures. It is this intense Will that these Jousts are supposed to develop. These Jousts can be elaborated upon (there aren't just two or three of these). However these are enough to start you on the road to Reality, Access, Acceptance and Absorption.

Tilting

After completing the first two Jousts, used the loo, had a drink of water, walked around the room, you will return to your chairs. Here the President formally begins the Joust. The Womb Joust and Silent Tilting are performed for as long as it takes to get the participants back in control and in Reality. Ten minutes often suffice. Note: By this time the robotic-men-at-arms are sick of being shut down. The little time spent in this break between Joust's is enough for a "self" to reanimate your grail. You may be able to sense what you experienced as disIntegration, as this "self" takes over or attempts to do so. If up to this point you have never Realised disIntegration and the existence of your different "selves," you can now sense this. Students like to spend as little time between Jousts for they relish Reality, which is to say that having already spent some time in the other two jousts, participants readily re-Access Reality. The longer you continue Jousting, with each break between Jousts, the "idiots" become wiser and simpler. "they" know that you are getting ready to shut them down when you sit down to Joust, and "one" of "them" may panic, becoming irrational. This makes the Joust interesting and instructive for the individual. Eventually "they" realise who is Master and "they" like very much your *self* as it shows and maintains attentiveness as "each" performs even something as simple as standing up or walking to the loo. This is because you are acute in witnessing the activity of "each" "self." After jousting and upon having to stand a "self" well versed in this dexterity will conduct this activity by re-running the "stand" programme. If your *self* can remain Consciously Aware, (It) you can witness/love the activity of this "self," while remaining Conscious and in the Sensual state of wonder and Absorption.

The desired result of this joust is for the Attacker to deliver a communication, which in turn is to be received and Accepted by the other jouster. The Acceptor is not to react in any way. If the Acceptor is unable to Accept and instead emotes in any way (by laughter, crying or a definite expression change), then either the Attacker or the President stops the joust and begins when the Acceptor and the Attacker are both ready to begin again. The Attacker should repeat the word or words that called forth that specific robotic-man-at-arms of the Acceptors' to man "his" or "her" Dream Keep.

This is important. Understand that once a specific robotic-man-at-arms is called forth and (loads a specific programme from "its" repertoire) takes that person to a specific "Womb" of a specific time slot (out-of-(present) Time) that, that specific programme ("Womb" is entered) is called up (held in RAM), if still another programme is evoked, then that robotic-man-at-arms accesses still another programme, which makes coming to Reality, being able to Accept that much more difficult.

So stick to repeating the exact words or references that elicited reactions (re-enactment), stopping the joust each time that the Attacker evokes from the Acceptor any reactions (emotes). This can take quite awhile. This Tilt can never be discontinued until the original attack is Accepted (elicits no reaction), no matter how many times that the tilt must be stopped and restarted.

(Having and displaying no response is indicative of Accepting) Once the Acceptor Accepts the specific attack used by the Attacker then the roles are changed: Attacker becomes the Acceptor, and Acceptor becomes the Attacker.

Example

- Attacker: I can just imagine you eating those beans and farting.
- Acceptor: (no response)
- Attacker: You bend over to tie your shoe and you let out this long, I mean Really long, ripping fart that propels you across the room.
- Acceptor: (no response)
- Attacker: Yesterday at lunch you couldn't stop laughing
- Acceptor: (starts laughing)
- Attacker: Stop. Ready to begin again?
- Acceptor: (regains composure) Yes.
- Attacker: At lunch you.

- Acceptor: (laughs)
- Attacker: Stop. Ready to begin again?
- Acceptor: (regains composure) Yes.
- Attacker: lunch.
- Acceptor: (laughs)
- Attacker: Stop. Ready to begin again?
- Acceptor: (regains composure) Yes.
- Attacker: lunch.
- Acceptor: (laughs)
- Attacker: Stop. Ready to begin again?
- Acceptor: (regains composure) Yes.
- Attacker: lunch.
- Acceptor: (laughs)
- Attacker: Stop. Ready to begin again?
- Acceptor: (regains composure) Yes.

This goes on until the Acceptor no longer allows its “idiot” to respond, thus dissolving “its” control over the Acceptor’s grail. For the Acceptor to regain control, demand fealty of her RWAA or his RMAA, which ever the case may be, is all there is to it. Of course this could take hours or weeks. The Joust can never be discontinued until the Acceptor demands fealty (stops responding involuntarily/ robotically/ unConsciously).

- Attacker: lunch.
- Acceptor: (laughs)
- Attacker: Stop. Ready to begin again?
- Acceptor: (regains composure) Yes.
- Attacker: lunch.
- Acceptor: (laughs)
- Attacker: Stop. Ready to begin again?
- Acceptor: (regains composure) Yes.
- Attacker: lunch.
- Acceptor: (no reaction)
- Attacker: lunch farts.
- Acceptor: (no reaction)
- Attacker: lunch farts.
- Acceptor: (no reaction)
- Attacker: You heard a huge fart.
- Acceptor: (no reaction)
- Attacker or President: Good, now we will reverse roles.
- (Attacker becomes the Acceptor and visa versa.

The best attack is one that elicits laughter (if other than laughter is elicited then the person is insane – beware of serious man), for even though laughter is more Accepting than other emotional attitudes, it is easier to stimulate from strangers. Whatever phrase or word that elicited a reaction from the supposed Acceptor, got him or her to not accept, rather to exude life-Force, must be repeated until he or she can rule its grail, rule or shut down the “self” that animates the body. Over and over the joust must be STOPPED formally, Restarted formally, and that specific phrase must be repeated that invoked the specific RWAA or RMAA to animate the

Acceptor's body or grail. For hours, if need be, the joust may continue. Never. Never ended until the Acceptor Accepts, does not react to the *Stimulus*.

The more negative and aggressive or serious a person is the more deeply Asleep it is. Generally a person's robotic-man-at-arms is using the more acceptable "being a good child" plate of "its" armour(y). Although, sometimes "it" is so desirous of "love" that "it" will go ballistic. By the use of a President often a ruling "self" being but a child, will imagine and hallucinate the President to be a familiar bairn attendant and the Attacker to be a sibling competing for the (Mommy's or Daddy's) President's attention.

Your robotic-man-at-arms becomes impatient and lonely, for by these acts of Will you have crowded that specific robotic-man-at-arms out of being, and by your continuation of Wilfulness you disallow the robotic evocation of any and all of your various robotic-men-at-arms and so too "their" autonomies. "they" are all available but not one of "them" is in command of the Keep, for the Keep is dissolved. Your self (with the help and Will of *self*), which is the spirit of your grail, is in control. Your self has been in the dungeon for years, perhaps since it was overshadowed and protected by the "selves" when self was one or three years young. During and right after Jousting your robotic-men-at-arms are powerless which "they" cannot tolerate. Try to learn from this example. Your every day life must be one of control and subjugation of your "selves." As you shift from one method of Jousting to the next joust, a switch is turned on autonomically which calls forth your robotic-man-at-arms (*Stimulus*) to familiarise (fit the new environment and its requirements into a Dream Keep's distortion). Via Will you slowly and with deliberation learn the methodology of "selves" and demand fealty of "each." This involves an important occurrence. Every time you joust your attitude is one of or should be one of pure Will. You will assume an attitude of perfect you. You will not be anything like any of your RW(M)AA. You will be performing and maintaining enter Champion (a physical husk).

By maintaining the Awareness Real-ised during jousting and eventually developed into enter Champion, the student holds the ability to Access, via entering Champion, at will. This is the practising of rule over your robotic-men-at-arms. Up until this point the robotic-men-at-arms had to recall or leave Reality in order to return to a past that housed in "its" memory/ imagination a bairn attendant (surrogate), whom it can please or in the case of certain armoury of a RMAA, whose attention "it" can elicit. So the reaction or re-enactment of an attention eliciting programme is what comes Natural for your "selves."

The idea is simple. By jousting you will (by use of Will) Access Reality/ FORCE/ GOD and this will shut down your emoting "idiots," who have fallen Asleep/ been ignored due to your practising Will via the act of Will of Jousting. After Jousting, as "one" tries to retake control "it" Senses that you, your *self* is in Command. Your *self* becomes "its" surrogate bairn attendant, which could continue forever, or until your attention falters. The resident RW(M)AA now has a bairn attendant or ruler in (present) Reality, which is you, your *self* (the one that throughout your life has talked to "each" via internal dialogue) combined with Grail (true-self) or (Real) self, whose development stopped (it atrophied) back in bairnhood as "they" were created.

The development of "selves" happened because your parents left you in a crib with no womb-like touch-love, so you went to a place called "Womb" and there your self remains (trapped – imprisoned). The development of "selves" happened because you were forced to invent separate personalities to deal with different attendants. These attendants did not allow you to free-associate; for you were **mostly** quarantined. They tried to teach you and ended up imprisoning you in a Dream Keep of their design. So a great deal of your robotic programming is huge and encumbering just to do the simplest of tasks. If those bairn attendants had given you a lot of touch and allowed your own Will to grow and develop, you would have remained Real and would have developed only short and pragmatic programmes.

To Sense the flashings and watch changes in a Pavlovian's coloration as it endeavours to tie a shoe or eat a food that one of its "idiots" has distorted in practising Grande Opinion in order to elicit "love," is to witness an act that is Really twisted and to experience sophistication of utter confusion, which exhausts the beast.

You don't have to be jousting, doing Kung Fu or any other form of paradox to demand fealty of your robotic-men-at-arms, for you can learn to enter Champion at Will. At first you will need to continually re-return your self to its own rule by Jousting or some other form of paradox, but eventually you will know how to shift

your focal point and assume the same non-ATTITUDE that you Accessed from Jousting or doing any of an array of paradoxes.

This attitude is called for now enter Champion, for you become a sort of Lancelot (Meredith), who, if you recall from legend, was this 'perfect being' or 'ideal being'. There was, by the way nothing wrong with his loving Gwynevere, Arthur Accepted and encouraged it, for love is always right and good. Rather it was his assuming the addiction to "no"-ing of the masses, imagining something was wrong with love and colouring this love into "love," a "no." Before coming to Camelot Lancelot roamed and was not into internalising and thought. He liked to do. He did not spend his energy with dreaming. Eventually becoming a knight of the round table whose members discussed many things, Lancelot took up the practise of internalising. enter Champion is a doer. It is a physical husk (not mental or dreamer), a void in which the grail feels safe enough to emerge from the dungeon of the Castle-unConsciousness and rule the body once again. It is a Lancelot: before Lancelot was corrupted by his contact with thinkers/dreamers.

Once having been re-acquainted with dreaming via 'discussion' it was Lancelot's own "self-reprimand-word-touch-love" that made the situation deteriorate. Lancelot "loved" Arthur and wanted him to "love" him the way someone in his youth had. Lancelot had to feel as though he had done a "no" in order to "feel" "lovingly" guilty. Eventually he worked the entire situation around to be the centre of the "love"/ attention. Imaginings are just that destructive.

So you don't have to be doing Tai Chi or Jousting all day to rule your body, for you can learn to enter Champion at will and align your "self" that identifies a *Stimulus* and dons its suit of programmes or armour(y) with your grail or self as ruler, which allows holy to re-unite during wakefulness (not only during deep sleep as it now does). By doing this the "self" of that moment is simplified, for "it" has the full attention of grail, for whom it does, very lovingly and perfectly, any task given "it." Fall Asleep and falter in your Awareness and your "self" will sophisticate and make use of an attention getting programme that can be very good at eliciting your grail's attention, quite possibly near fatal, in any rate, more than likely negative.

You can Formalise, much as you formalise a Joust, standing, walking, tire changing, house cleaning, eating, having sex, preparing food, tying a shoe, brushing your hair, washing the dog, etc. by merely paying attention to your Physicality: every movement, your breathing pattern, every posture (as that "self" performs). And quietness/ Absorption will be your attitude. This is Awareness. Breathing is the first thing you do, so to be aware of this and control the breathing pattern means everything to your Accessing Reality.

To hear people talk about looking for the Holy Grail as though it is an actual object is great fun. It stems from a situation that involved an act of Will. To have a student proceed to find an object that requires a balancing of discipline, patience and understanding: the Will to find and retrieve this object. Often void masters require students to perform acts of Will. It is best to do everything necessary to live in a state of utter Awareness. Awareness many imagine to be a state of mind, but it is a state of being. Understand that the mind like sex is over rated. What people call promiscuity I would call sexual love. Most people practise exclusive sexual "love," which is initiated by a "no" and ends in the tremendously wasteful emoting of life-Force. Real love is the opposite of exclusiveness, for it is Acceptance. Of course a voider, and any idiot can Sense that sexual intercourse is tremendously strenuous, so voiders are loathe to practise it. I recall teaching one person to use Ceptel on her spouse, for she was expending too much life-Force. Her husband would wake up more satisfied than usually, for she merely left his mind with sweet dreams (memories): words (false memories) instead of actually recalled actions. Eventually she learned to Absorb his emotings, particularly available during sex, so she refrained from using sweet memories via Ceptel to placate his sexual obsessiveness. Such obsessiveness comes from dreaming, which is thinking. Understand that the mind like sex is over rated.

All your life you are told and programmed that learning is an intellectual thing of great value, actually thinking is the problem. Truly it is a tool, a weapon, yet Homo robotics uses it incessantly to weave and imprison (you) its self safely in a Dream Keep. But the learning of Will via intellectual discipline is quite instructive, for it too is an act of Will, a practice of Doing.

Culturally a bairn attendant will drive its child insane/ robotic by his or her insistence in "teaching" their child. They imagine that they can save their bairn a lot of grief if they do not let it free-associate, but instead

they formulate a most sophisticated and wastefully convoluting mind. To perform the simple act of tying the shoe, if 'taught' to do so may involve pathways in the mind that are twelve miles longer, energising million more synapses than if the bairn had been allowed to free-associate: teach itself (rather than have the bairn attendant formulate a "self" to do the task/ run a programme). Bairn attendants shower them with "word-touch-love," or lecturing. Most children merely become expert at pretending to be stupid as a result. A few become expert at dreaming (intellectualism of distinct types), and so unReal and impractical and inept in dealing with the majority of life's requirements.

So far I have described two misunderstandings, but the list is seemingly unlimited. Homo robotics is so confused and encumbered by what it has been "taught" that it can Sense little, and hallucinates readily in order to reconstruct its Castle-unConsciousness. Jousting is a method of dissolving ones robotic-man-at-arms of the moment by acts of Will, doing specific acts with discipline for extended periods. By continuing these acts of Will all robotic-men-at-arm's attempt at animating the host's body are then under the Aware scrutiny and Will, not of a recalled "Womb"-er or imagined bairn attendant, but under the scrutiny of the grail's *self*. The soul of the body or grail can be made whole or Holy. The holy then can return, during wakefulness, to the grail, becoming Holy Grail and in a state or attitude of Absorption, rather than animated by robotic-men-at-arms that emote as they were "taught" to do.

The explanation is long, must be repeated many times to get through your Keep. Paradoxically the cure is thinking nothing: stopping internal dialogue. Very different from running all those thought processes you unConsciously and incessantly run and re-run.

By Formalising every endeavour, being Aware of what you allow a robotic-man-at-arms to perform like standing, walking, tire changing, house cleaning, eating, having sex, preparing food, tying a shoe, brushing your hair, washing the dog, etceteras you are practising self love, for by being so simple, Aware, Real you reduce that robotic-man-at-arms or "self" to do the Will of Grail while it is Holy. By the way, washing the dog will be much easier while being Aware/ Real. When you are Real (in (present) Time) you are Absorbing / more Sensitive, so you align with the dog readily. It feels loved (empathy) and knows what you want of it If you are dealing with other animals such as people so too will these be drawn to you, but less readily, for a dog is usually more Conscious than most Homo robotics. Aligning with human readily can prove a burden, for people who tend to be drawn to you, who are looking for a surrogate bairn attendant readily imagine that you are just that. On the other hand it can be advantageous, for their desire for you is uncontrollable- they become Absorbed/ Accessed by you and willing and wanting to please (even wanton in some cases).

What you should detect, when you shift from one joust to the next joust, is how long it takes before you regain rule of your grail and melt that Castle that immediately becomes animated by entrance into unfamiliar environs.

The same goes for the period after ending Formalised Jousting for the day. How long before one of your robotic-men-at-arms takes control of your grail and returns self to the dungeon of the Castle-unConsciousness?

Before going on I want to stress where you are during or rather at the completion of a Joust. You are quiet (even loathe to once again speak or use words), Real, atoned and Sensual. You are so very simple, a child again in regard to Sensitivity to the extent that colours, smells and all things are acutely appreciated. You are in no hurry, for you are not ruled by a "self" wearing armour coloured with imPatience. Try to extend this period of Realness (eventually, forever). As your robotic-men-at-arms slowly rebuild "their" Castle-unConsciousness "they" will shut down your Sensuality/ ability to Sense, "they" will start internalising in order to conjure "their" Dream Keep. "one" might convince you to hurry, but actually you can choose not to indulge that "one." You can demand that "it" does your bidding and continue to be Real. Otherwise you will soon be Asleep again and readily emoting, generally exuding your precious life-Force in the form of evil, as only Homo robotics does. After jousting Walk. Walking, doing a task quietly and as simple as a four year old, is where Jousting can land you. Look around. You are Sensing Reality for the first time in years.

Fun

L. Ron Hubbard was a rebel Druid. Druidism evolved as a method of developing the individual's possibilities, so that the life of the individual can be made easier by getting others to do for he or she. It has evolved as a method for the manipulation of the masses by manipulating strategic managers or leaders. L. Ron felt that the people should know individualistically how they function and then teach each to rule their own destiny.

Many cultures in human's existence tried to develop the human potential and some came very close to doing so effectively. However because of the perfect switch, "no" programme, all civilisations eventually self devour and thus collapse on Earth. Those who placed you on this planet counted on you to eventually build a technology, coupled with the "no" programme, that would spiral up to a point that would end in the destruction of the planet's atmosphere, which would facilitate that company's mining process. This is the Lemming Process that has resulted in the demise of countless highly evolved cultures on your present planet and on many others that your kind has been thus planted by this mining company and by that company's competitors.

Many of these Earth cultures have evolved the potential of the human beast, but unfortunately the switch has never been identified. It is my job to reveal to you this switch. Whether you take what I have written to heart is your problem. The courts (off your world courts) decided that we (Lucifer Corporation: energy and mining) only supply you with the knowledge of the switch. You must supply the Will to switch off that switch, for Will is the point of all existence.

Presently Ladies and Druids train the ruling class of Earth. So this is presently the system to be displayed to you all. Minority-Americans have been tainted by the Northern European cultures. Despite the colour of their skin or their mother cultures, the people of your adopted planet are under the influence of Druidism. Centuries ago there was not this globalisation, and there were sphere's of dominance. No matter the races under the sphere of dominance, the dominant culture influenced all. Within the sphere of China in its dominance Koreans, Japanese, etceteras were influenced. Presently Northern Europeans dominate.

There developed a rebellion against the Roman and other dominant cultures. These cultures demanded Discipline to a higher degree than Patience and Understanding. Curiosity and tolerance eventually stabilised these cultures, yet stagnation took place. Stability gave rise to wealth and free time. This free time is always spent perfecting "love"/ "no"-ing. A tourist started a religion of tolerance. You know him as Christ. Christian dictum is well known: "turn the other cheek."

The Druids saw the power of this Christian religion and the power of extending their sphere of control via Rome in concept as the diplomat, maintainer of Universal law and a stabilising force.

L. Ron Hubbard was a trained Druid who rebelled. Much to the chagrin, of many Druids and Ladies, for these certainly do not want their power over humankind diminished. There are dissenters like L. Ron. He lived long enough to allow the Druidic knowledge out, but still the Lemming Process remained hidden, for it is a perfect system. Despite your knowledge of Will taught by many cultures, least of all Druidism, the Process remains. The fact that you re-run "love" programmes out-of-(present)Time has concealed your attachment to "no"-ing.

Think of the many Pre-Colombian cultures that created high cultures and strong manipulative classes, yet where are they today? These, like so many others, fell prey to the Lemming Process that was fuelled by the "no" programme. Perfecting "love" is hatred. This is what devours. Acceptance is real love, merely a process of accumulating life-Force, which ends in Ascension, ultimately. In stages of Absorption it results in Magical capabilities. If you can flip the switch you can individually Realise survival and Magical possibilities and this includes leaving this planet while keeping it intact. The Christian credo of Accepting is at the forefront of your evolution. In fact Absorption/ Acceptance is important universally for all creatures throughout the many Universes.

The methodology of perfecting "no"-ing is presently found in Islam. Once the highest culture for it embraced and tolerated all ways of life, now has matured and perfected "no"-ing. If left unchecked it may,

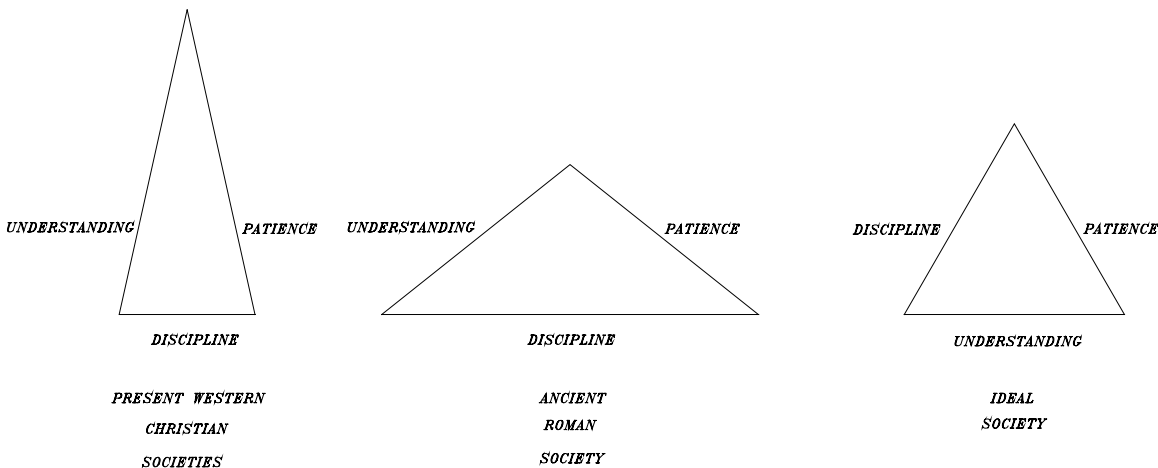
coupled with the high state of scientific accumulated knowledge and technical know-how, devour the atmosphere on schedule for the mining of Earth by Lucifer.

Scientology is not the only method for Accessing life-Force, but it is the one available to you creatures, for Druidism is locked in debate and attached to its purpose of supplying stability here. Coupled with the knowledge found in this book Scientology is your best path to acquire Will. Its basis is Druidic without the feudal fealty required by certain Ladies and Druids. Knowing of the Lemming Process makes almost all your religions possible Access points to Reality, where Force is Accessible and so individual Ascension possible.

Much of the Druidic method requires Will over your Castle-unConsciousness. Inheritance supplied impetus to chosen individuals to overcome their Castle-unConsciousness and embrace the lessons in schools that use coven (tribalism) as a means to Access.

For those of you that do not have inheritance to earn as incentive, most of you will find the universal Castle-unConsciousness difficult to overcome. Tribal-Consciousness is rare, for it requires Real/ Conscious individuals. In order to find sixteen Castle-unConscious individuals who Willingly forego their Dreamy "no"-ing long enough to Access the Force by entering into Communion (form a study coven) is very unlikely in present civilisations. Feudalism ("Mom" & "Dad" or king and queen mentality) is the influential and imprisoning factor. Scientology requires much one-on-one study and is ideal for those Castle-unConscious creatures that have the resources to pay for this intense study. It can become Freudian, so is not as good as coven study, BUT IT IS EFFECTIVE.

I have explained to you, and manipulated you by the intense way the material is here delivered, the knowledge of coven study. By the end of this book it will be complete. But I believe that your Dream Keep is far too encumbering for you to overcome individualistically and enter into any communion long enough to do you any good without discipline. Doing something half way may make you so deranged that only a Scientologist can bring you out of your Dreaming Trance. Discipline is lacking in cultures tainted with turn-the-other-cheek. Acceptance and the ability to Absorb and store life-Force is so very important, yet when too much Patience and Understanding are implemented at a cost to Discipline, then imbalance occurs. This is called neglect or irresponsibility, which is practised to the demise of American children and thus is ending America's reign. The planet is ruled and influenced by creatures that turn the other cheek and allow tolerance, yet this makes Access difficult for the individual member that has never known Discipline and whose culture has never taught Discipline. Tolerance is fine but America is such an unimaginable joke, for it is a prime example of neglect. Neglect results when Patience and Understanding overshadows Discipline. I have repeated this and even supplied you with a pretty picture. Magic is learning Cause, Effect and Access. In a world of extreme Patience and Understanding no one can learn Magic. So, "Let the "no" programmed (to the nth degree) Moslems kill you all. It is the Christian thing to do. Have a smiley face day."



Beware of Serious People, for these are Seriously insane. Societies, like Moslem ones, wherein Discipline is too intense and to the point that there is so little patience or understanding that there is no tolerance

for change; self-devouring and perfection of the Dark Tower takes place. "no"-ing is their only obsession, their one god becomes hatred. Their home countries are dictatorships, their religious leaders, too are tyrants. Freedom and free-association is not. The dark Dream Keep is the only sanctuary, which is built and maintained by repetitive "no"-ing.

Two extremes: praise Jesus (I have my cheeks spread), and Allah Akbar (let me ram this up anyone's butt because god is nasty and demanding). You are made for one another. Bring the mining fleet closer, Earth will be ready on time.

This is the Position, or Rather Situation

The book nonSense was written in three weeks once it was decided when utter nonSense was ready for publication as an introduction to Reality. The book utter nonSense is the sort of textbook that the teachers of the knights of the round table would use if textbooks were allowed to be written and used.

Ladies and Druids rule your planet. Do you think that the Senators and Congresspersons or male and female Congressmen of the United States are ever going to allow you, the people, to vote democratically on every Bill they write? These are people brought up in Castles: only one or two parents, so they are utterly non-Tribal and then there is the system. To get elected there is a machine in place to raise money. These funds come from special interest groups. It is illegal for US politicians to take bribes from foreign sources, yet they do all the time. Most of the big corporations have gone off-shore in order to get out of all sorts of obligations and rules set out to serve American citizens. Right in America there are Indian Tribes that are separate countries within the United States, yet these foreign countries give to re-election funds all the time to buy influence. Well Druids are not about to give up their power either.

The evil that you do to one another is a force on like planets (where you have been planted to slowly destroy the atmosphere so as to facilitate mining them). It does not need to exist, you can eliminate it, but until you do, evil exists and will be and is at the root of your demise. All religions are all right, but none will accomplish anything as long as you continue to produce evil: darkened life-Force. The Druidic System and all systems of manipulation (Templar) require that evil exists. It is apparent that Druidism and such religions as Taoism, Hinduism, Buddhism, Shintoism, Judaism, Islam, Christianity, Druidism (if you can call it a religion) and Scientology may know of evil, but does plainly not know of the Roots of evil (or neglect to mention them [strategically]). Most of this book is based on Druidic methods of becoming Powerful individuals, for the present rulers speak English and are directly manipulated by Ladies and their Druidic Warriors. However, evil and the Roots of it, because that employee of Lucifer many Millennium ago was so sharp, it made an almost impregnable Castle-unConsciousness in a Tribal creature (you), I was hired to inform you of evil. What you do with this knowledge is up to you. The letter of the law has been filled, I am done. This text has been approved and I have disseminated it in the fashion that knowledge is normally disseminated on your planet. My hope is that you do nothing with this information, for I get a bonus if the mining fleet schedule is kept.

Study Group

In the public world of "no" / "love" programmed Homo robotics, Castle-unConscious animals, the coven is referred as a "Study Group." But in class and in the isolation of schools Coven is the term used by students and their teachers. The delineation is significant, for Coveners are endeavouring to become Tribal Conscious Homo sapiens and perhaps one day Ladies and Druids (Homo emovens). Whereas, the rest of the planet houses the idiots who are desperately and obsessively trying to ready the planet for mining.

In coven students are required / encourage to have sex in every possible way. If someone in their group requests intercourse, homosexual sex, or whatever - all are encouraged to oblige, and voyeurism is encouraged. No matter whether not they like or dislike any of the requested activities. Exclusive and exclusionary sexual coupling is frowned upon. Everyone must become empathic. Physicality is the root of Real love or empathy, so do it, try it, experience everything. Ware those physical aspects down to Realness. In a few days the teaching vernacular is learned, sexual experiences are seen for what

are: exhaustive- a waste of life-Force, and coveners are ready to get down to business. Most importantly their sexual discoveries have started them on the road to empathy. Covens of sixteen members (half female- half male) become one acting together, thinking the same thoughts, and caring about the survival of their group.

Castle-unConscious beasts have trouble interacting with three others who were also raised in a Dream Keep. Jealousy and all sorts of preconceived attention eliciting programmes (arms from their armouries) are autonomically re-run. Their RW(M)AA's vizor offers hallucinated unRealities, so "love" programmes can be readily re-run. It is so difficult for Castle-unConscious creatures to form into coven that without the Will of individuals to inherit wealth, these individuals would not form into covens. This book will hopefully afford readers *Understanding* sufficient to practice will in order to join into a coven. But there are other avenues.

Because human is a tribal animal denied the majority by misconditioning, forming coven goes against ones instincts. And the intimacy of negating to "no" programmed beast seems more desirable than empathy. But empathy is everything. Realising Ascension. Coven takes you there sooner and in more stable and calculatable avenue than any other method for your planet. But to bring the Walls of ones Dream Keep down requires huge amounts of Will and the building of Consciousness via Acts of Will.

The Fourth Joust

The Fourth, Fifth and Sixth Jousts are more or less diagnostic. The Fourth and Fifth jousts here were developed by Scientologists, for the Scientological system does not use the mechanism of coven or Tribal study nor group (nudity) Reality. Nudity and sexual orgy to build empathy and Realness is not used by Scientologists, for these are tabooed in societal systems that survived by creating huge memberships to win wars of attrition. Because of lack of nudity/ group empathy, Scientologists have had to work more on a Freudian methodology of Auditors, not unlike (surrogate bairn attendants) psychiatrists. Since we are born in a Restraint and Excessive hyper-sexual society, more than likely you will not be able to join in covens, so I have included these two TR's (as Scientologists have renamed jousting). I am not allowed to publish the actual TR's, or rather not be bothered approaching the Church members of Scientologists because in order to get a go ahead to publish this is so difficult. Some Druids and Ladies have been against the Scientology Church from its inception, for these Ladies are fearful of losing their control over humankind, which is a distinct possibility (and hoped for by other Druids and Ladies). Luckily for humankind the Scientologists via huge amounts of fortitude and collective Will have fended off their demise by these few and well Established Druidic rulers of humankind. This has made them very paranoid, which makes them not easily approachable. You can look up the drills or TR's for yourself and then read my analysis. What is very important is by merely referring to their TR's you will hopefully Realise that you have another avenue. Buddhas, teachers, gurus and Scientologists are good sources of learning, but *Understand* that all people can be readily hallucinated by your "selves" to be surrogate attendants. The purpose of coven and the use of Vlys and Meridiths (nihil both) to direct the coven are for the elimination of hallucinating mother and father figures and the grip "selves" via the imagined will of these surrogate bairn attendants has you via "their armour(y)."

The first three jousts are common among many schools. But the next two I am mentioning to align you with the reality of Scientology. There are many jousts after the first three that Meridiths and Vlys use for correcting and eliminating specific characteristics (bents or imbalances) they observe in their students, but the unlikelihood that the reader will become a Druid and use/formulate a coven in which to learn is doubtful, for nudity, universal love and empathy is not part of the psyche of humans raised in a hyper-sexual Castle-unConscious society. So I want to introduce you to another possibility: Scientology. Granted, without the use of coven, what should take weeks, will take years (and this mentioned Third and Fourth Joust is necessary), but that may be all you can tolerate, or all that your religious upbringing can tolerate. So much of religious doctrine is built on social norms and institutions and none of these societies have survived via nudity/ Realness/ Balance. Rather than restraint (for sexual Excess), pleasing a (hallucination king and queen) "Mommy"/ "Daddy," sibling jealousies, "no"-ing things and anything is difficult to STOP.

The Fourth and Fifth jousts let one know how real or unReal a student is after doing jousting for a while. On a regular basis the first three jousts will suffice. They are enough to land the person close to Reality or once practised on a regular basis to re-establish Access to IT. Always remember that the longer you can remain in Reality the more Conscious, Aware and effective you will Be (in life). You will Be. Beingness. As far as the book and "self" knowledge, mention of these last three jousts with the reason for practising them is more significant than actually doing them, for by explaining them, I am here

offering you a better description of your bestiality. These jousts are not etched in stone. Understand that many acts of W jousts can be gamed to require that a beast forces itself to Access Reality. Repeat. Every task you do must become a game which you decide to indulge of your own volition. Only you can prevent forest fires. Take responsibility for your action is called Magic. Judicial systems should teach it. Systems of criminology should teach it. Schools should teach it. Parents should teach it. You should practise it. Asleepily performing re-ran tasks is not Magic. Magic is a Conscious act of Will.

In voider schools generally the students do work or physical activities with deep intent and constantly re-return to Reality via jousting whenever they or someone in their group Senses that they are out-of-it. When you do this sort of constant re-establishment of Access you will find that merely going through the process of Formal seating on steed and to enter Champion is enough, for these students eventually can go directly into the Third Joust with no trouble. Slowly it becomes a matter of merely re-establishing enter Champion after you or someone else suggests that you are out-of-it without jousting at all. Until students get to this stage they will have to do the jousts sequentially. But even this ritual can slowly be eliminated first the intervals between each successive jousts are shortened, and later only Tilting need be done. The final goal is of remaining in Reality.

Until then, these jousts must be performed sequentially. In order to do the Fourth Joust (TR) you must first do the first three. In this way the correct state of realness is established and the robotic-men-at-arms are denied. Because the Fourth involves learning to communicate and is an interactive situational of communion, it could elicits a particular activity from performers. These performances will less likely take place if the sequence is maintained. So be sure you have performed the first three Jousts before you begin this one.

You are a tribal animal. If you recall from what you have read here the two programmes that allowed certain ones of you to better survive the other tribes was:

1. The ability to co-ordinate group effort in order to survive cold winters and,
2. Understanding that one must prepare for the cold, long winter, which develops foresight.

Animals that evolved in warm climates never develop the second one to the degree that animals from cold climates do. Unfortunately foresight is a form of dreaming or can become incessant thought over the endeavour of surviving the cold is at a cost to Spirituality in so many cases. Communion involves gaming. Consent of the governed is a matter of the group rallying around and taking directions from the member of the tribe that has the knowledge of how to perform certain necessary tasks for the group's survival. Cold weather required social democracy, whereas warm climates did not incite the practice of democracy or socialism. One city state amongst many hundreds in the ancient Grecian World was given democracy by the landing in Piraeus of Teunesia and Minerva in longships from Northern Europe (Holland).

Communication is very important to animals if they are going to Commune in any concerted effort. When a person is an Homo robotics and “no” programmed, communications can purposely be confused (a “no”), inadequate and filled with antagonism or selective deficiencies. For those are the sorts of weaponry Asleep animals re-run to get attention or in order to extend the period of communication (“eye and word-touch-love”). This is Normal and Natural. If you endeavour to become Real and unNatural, to raise an Octave, then communication must become Real and thus balanced. Colorations and abstractions do not exist among Real animals. Once you learn to communicate in a Real way, then you can become better at Templar communication, which is communications that manipulate dumb animals to do as you game. Coven students skip this hurdle as a matter of fact, for rebalancing themselves tribally, thus socially by sexual intimacy makes them eliminate so much Fre (un)naturalness.

Communications come in many forms. Some are banter. The reason for banter is to extend the period of “eye and word-touch-love” for the RW(M)AA that practices banter as one of its “love” programmes. So much of it is verbose, so like this book? To describe Florida in winter for instance one might say: “Florida is pleasant in winter, not so dreadfully cold and not too dreadfully cold, yet not so sunny and not so rainy.”

Notice the amount of negatives. A real person would Accept Florida for the way it is. If pressed for a description you might hear that it is typical of the Caribbean or that it is very nice.

Next I will describe the sort of character everyone has met at sometime in their life. Their endeavour is to extend the period of “eye-touch-love” and “word-touch-love.” I am sure you know people that are like this Relief Engineer, for he is a grand communicator. At this time the ship has a visiting, what is called, Relief Engineer, for it is an holiday weekend. While the engineers still work during the day, so I had the chance to experience this hilarious guy. The robotic-man-at-arms of his name learned to talk, did so around someone that held attention by stretching a simple answer into this long and convoluted but

verbose, incessantly repetitive and redundant horse crap ... no, utter nonsense, which was far worse than the trite tedium of this book. The Relief Engineer's job is to relate things he found wrong and to either remedy them or point them out to the regular staff aboard the vessel.

I discovered that his communications are strategically designed by his robotic-men-at-arms to necessitate that you listen to the entire long spiel before you are given the pertinent information. Often this information is so well camouflaged that people have to ask him to repeat or ask him to affirm that so and so is what he meant. By using this strategy "he" held the period of "eye-touch-love" and "word-touch-love" longer than without it. I would listen once and know, despite his robotic-men-at-arms' double speak and strategic omissions, what he was trying not to communicate. Because his robotic-man-at-arms that used this method of confused communications usually did an affected job of miscommunication, "it" had trouble with me for I would walk off as soon as I had even a hint of the pertinent information. I might walk off to try to use it, leaving his robotic-man-at-arms blissfully rambling on, and then I would quickly return to tell him the results.

I am constantly gaming with the beasts on this planet, for that is in what I have decided to indulge. These beasts are unReal things, like any computer that is mis-programmed. I have always found you beasts entertaining. During the course of the three days he was to stand day watches I'd perform experiments. On one occasion I had remedied a situation that should have or could have taken all afternoon, so I had time to experiment. The body I use was greatly damaged, which is how I was able to inhabit it: it died. To animate it requires a large amount of Will, so I often draw necessary resources from those that readily exude such life-Force. The crew on these metal boxes (ship) exudes life-Force, as do any beasts with the difference that no force escapes this box and because they are lonely being away from "love" ones, they exude constantly while re-running "love" programmes. This Relief Engineer was the perfect provider of such energy. I would listen, Accept and suck all the life-Force that he exuded and then some. When people get very Asleep, they cannot Sense very much, let alone someone sucking them dry. I was teaching a student there to Accept, and used this opportunity to show him how it is done. By the end of the day the Relief Engineer was exhausted. Normally he would go home for the night and return the next day, but this night he got up from the Chief Steward and stayed aboard, for he was exhausted. Most people emote, even become antagonised with the engineer's wordiness, so I showed the boy how to listen and Accept quietly, while happily encouraging the beast to further emote and exude life-Force in emoting. The student quickly picked up on the methodology, and was readily able to Absorb. For you, the reader I am relating the way so many people mis-communicate strategically while controlled by "selves." Hopefully you have witnessed a person that is like this Relief Engineer, so you *Understand*.

This brings me to the story of the Rose Woman. The Rose Woman, I'll call her Rose. Rose was a rose, always surrounded by roses. Some people are into smelling of acrid lemons, but not Rose, she was hooked on roses. A pleasant smell you might think, but many people that had any interaction with the Rose Woman developed an aversion to the smell of roses. Hilarious. One guy pulled all his roses out of his lawn. I learned of her existence through a conversation with a student who had happened upon her at an AA meeting, which is a very good place to observe the Homo robotics at its most confused. Teachers collect a roster of examples of particular types of Homo robotics for students to observe and places to observe them. The AA meeting was on the roster, but Rose was indeed a find.

Rose had a Jersey accent (U. S. A. - New Jersey) that was like a cheap and sleazy carnival person's: untrustworthy, insincere, impatient and wordy. Rose's holy had years ago directed her to have a car accident as a SHOCK, which then required her Will to develop if she was ever to recuperate - ever to walk or (God, forbid) talk again. Rose rehabilitated herself miraculously. This is saying a lot, for it took tremendous zeal. She did it by internalising (praying) and thus weaving a fabric of recovery, much like the story of the little choo-choo-train that kept repeating...

Rose believed in non conventional means of healing or New Age, for these had helped her. Also these were "no" controversial ideas that she "loved" to tout, or so she coloured them, which could be sensed by listening to her voice and watching her facial expression as she argued, rather than discussed, New Age ideas to a potential "lover"/ antagonist. But rather than these she developed Will, which was the true basis of her recovery. She had then started touting these New Age methods. This was bad for anyone or any New Age idea she decided to patronise or so this student seriously felt. This student imagined that her Grande Opinion concerning Rose was correct, both in what is called a righteous way and in an unnecessary way. Her assumptions she tried to explain with great complexity of detail. I stood there Accessing the student's emoting concerning the Rose Woman, for she "no"-ed the Rose mercilessly. I fuelled the conversation whenever there was a lag in the student's Grande Opinion concerning Rose by "no"-ing some aspect of Rose, Real, contrived or suggested. Doing so induced an unending flow of life-Force from the student, which started to pay its toll in the being of the student. Generally I don't a

student to indulge in illusions and in this case self delusions, but I thought this a perfect way to destroy one of this student's own delusions. Understand that I used disIntegration: a part of me was mirroring the student's "no"-ing, while my self was absorbing her exudations and a bit more life-Force than she was exuding Naturally.

What a find was our Rose! In any given area characters are catalogued for student's lessons. There she was standing directly in front of us. She was so blatantly imprisoned in her Castle-unConsciousness. The student was too, but could not Sense this or anything.

I suggested that she observe the Rose Woman for she practised devoutly, self delusion, "... as do you." "Rose is teacher, your lesson," I told her. I saw the student later in the day and asked if she were tired. She said that she was. I described to her what she had done throughout our conversation, and what I had done. I then suggested she try to be more Accepting, less "no"-ing and serious. Game. This entire lifetime must be gamed. By the time Coven Joust was carried out this student *Understood* just what I had purported that day to her. It takes some time before a concept penetrates the Walls. An onslaught necessary to lay siege to the Castle-unConsciousness. This book is a siege tool, a form of Ceptel.

In this area, from now on, I had another blatantly Asleep Homo Robotics for students to observe, with whom to converse, and get to know. This, Rose would "love" the attention of students, for it would be attention for that robotic-woman-at-arms of hers that was the antagonistic carney. I described to the student why I saw in her an hilarious creature. "Rose, Accept her, for if you "no" her then your Being is being devoured."

The Rose Woman collected ideas not for their value or definitive content but rather as later fuel ("no"s of controversy) for conversations she would enter into with others. In these conversations she spoke this insincere carney-like New Jersey accent that expressed antagonism and controversy, even aggression in its coloration. A part of that robotic-woman-at-arms animated her to do so constructed an illusion that "it" was some sort of intellectual. "it" pretended that you were disbelieving and did not like what she said, but the listener could have been in complete agreement, yet this did not compute for the student's personality that performed "her" strategy. When this robotic-woman-at-arms approached anyone "it" would change her voice, would colour her as antagonistic no matter how agreeable and Accepting the listener's attitude proved to be. I watched her interaction with her actual mother one day. It was a bitch feste. It was so plain to understand with whom she conversed every conversation with those she happened upon in her personal environment. Rose's prison was maintained by an ogre who was emotionally loud, irate and caustic. Rose hadn't a friend in the world, which was plain to even herself. She went from person to person accosting them with her cheap carney way. She'd rave about a spiritual endeavour as though she were doing it. Sort of like TV evangelists. Her dilemma was so plain but her robotic-woman-at-arms had no other technology for interacting, for eliciting attention. She/ "it" would use profanity and loudly, emotionally shout out material and information that "it" had been collecting all her life. Her attitude was antagonistic and controversial, yet the streams of verbosity were incessant that even the beast most desirous of "love" hardly made time to "no" her, for she was just that ridiculous. The student and I approached her and I Absorbed the life-Force that Rose readily exuded just as I had been doing from the student for a few minutes of her expounding on the significance of the Rose woman earlier. The way this is done is simple. I went on to explain it to the student. All you do is initiate the attitude of Acceptance. This attitude or state is the one that you enter via Jousting. For me I remain in this state of Absorption, but for you this attitude must be constructed and Wilfully maintained. Begin with a smile. Don't define or manufacture anything from what she says, don't analyse, just Accept. Be there but do not listen, only Sense the vibrations of her voice and the undulation of her being. Open yourself to her. It may help to have the attitude: that neither you nor she has any worthwhile thing to say or do. The wilder she emotes, the better you like her, for your attitude must affect until it effects your being. She is a lively and lovely person giving away her life-Force, readily. Accept It. I told her that the reason she started to feel nauseous earlier was because she was doing just what Rose is doing and back when she was "no"-ing Rose I was yes-ing her. "I was Accepting your emotings and then more," I told her. She found it difficult so I aligned her with me by standing behind her as I Accepted the Rose woman's emotings. Unfortunately requires Absorbing a little more than is being emoted initially in order to start the flows to course through the student's system (for Force).

Rose, having Accessed FORCE to cure herself, knew of the nature of FORCE, somewhat. As time went on even though she Sensed that I was sucking her energy and subsequently avoided me (not knowing why Consciously), and shut down whenever she saw me, as much as she could. If she didn't see me I could sneak up on her and begin Absorbing and eventually she would Sense where I was, turn to me, then she would stop her conversation, and thus interrupt her emoting. Incessant talkers loop and thus emote incessantly, for their programme of "love" eliciment is babble. The Rose babbled, for "it" v

hopeful. “it” desired attention, which “it” *Stimulated* by controversy. “love” to her RWAA was another’s disagreement. worked well with her Mother, so all it felt “it” had to do is hallucinate that her milieu was home to a “Mother,” whom is to “love” her.

I am telling you this for two reasons. The first is to stress to you that all Homo Robotics ‘learned’ to talk and see they do so via their robotic-(women or) men-at-arms. So talking is merely another “love” act. An act that is a vehicle for escape via “Womb”-ing. Talking is a “love” act while communicating is supposed to be a tool for co-ordination of effort begun and finished, or sent and received in a most pragmatic way. Rather than being used as a means to not only elicit attention and do so for an extended period of time, but also keeps the person safely imprisoned. Talking should not be an armoury of a robotic-man-at-arms used to elicit favour or disfavour: get a rise out of others or elicit long and extended periods of “eye- and word- touch-love” via arguments. Rather it should be a weapon used in (present) Time to accomplish group endeavours: tasks performed in communion with others. (Coven inadvertently teaches this)

Jousting is ancient technology. When first devised, this type of Formal Jousting used a book of non-sequiturs created by each teacher. The importance of non-sequiturs is that, because they do not express realness, neither the speaker nor the receiver of the communication can know how to accent or colour them. Since no communication should be altered by coloration (reading emotions into words by expression) such a joust will test whether the receiver of a communication re-enacts a “love” programme and colours the communication or distorts it in any way by how it responds to the communication of the non-sequitur. For instance the communicator delivers the statement, “Grass is green, houses can’t fly.” It is the Receiver’s task of acknowledging or showing to the Communicator that it has received the message— without an attitude without donning a suit of armour(y).

After having conducted jousts one through three for a few hours the participants take a five minute break to attend to their bodily needs and then right back to their steeds (chairs or stools). The Fourth and Fifth Jousts are diagnostic and since participants have only taken a short break from having done all three of the first three jousts they are put through the first Jousts quickly, and then into the Fourth. The short period of the break possibly allowed “one” of their “selves” to rule the joust and it is this “self” that may attempt to emerge and rule in the Fourth or Fifth Jousts. Understand that only because the participants had been jousting for sometime and were very Real did the President not require all three Jousts unless the break was long, then the participants must go back and re-establish Access to Reality.

Because a person’s robotic-men-at-arms have been for many hours denied “their” Dream Keep by jousting and not been allowed to be “loved” by imagined and recalled “Womb”-ers due to the performing of acts of Will of Formal Jousting “they” are anxious to resume “their” rule over one, and the conjuring of “their” Dream Keep. After all, the Castle-unConsciousness has been held together since “their” creation, since childhood, by fanaticism, seriousness, conjuring and unacceptability. Only during the deep sleep at bedtime and rare occasions of immersion in acts of Will, times of poor health and perhaps a quirky drug experience does anyone ever even glimpse Reality, partially and momentarily free of the encumbrances of any of “them” (men/women-at-arms). By changing the format of the Formal Joust from Tilting to the Formal Joust, the robotic-men-at-arms are called forth and try to man “their” Dream Keep, each looking for a symbol to call the joust to animate the Jouster’s body by initiating one of “their” programmes. If one of “them” can’t find one “it” imagines one, and RESPONDS to this fabricated or coloured “no” (returning to “Womb”). Quite often one of “them” does so and consequently re-runs a programme, which is designed to elicit attention. Being so long denied “love,” the “self,” if it does succeed, is basic and utilises a blatantly unsophisticated “no” programme, or simply day dreams in the Dream Keep (no longer pays attention to Reality). Other times an attitude of disgruntleness is re-enacted, and the tone of voice in acknowledging the non-sequitur communication will be hostile or in some way unreal. Normally the acknowledgement of receipt of a communication is pleasantly and acceptingly un-emotional. Understand that non-sequiturs are perfect because they can be readily coloured or not. Any other statement delivered would be expected to be received in and with a certain attitude, but non-sequiturs are colourless, or rather should be when communicated.

It is the President’s function to arbitrate. Often a robotic-man-at-arms may be so anxious for “love” that “its” attitude is blatantly “performed.” Thereby “it” will elicit a disapproval from “its” “Daddy” (or “Mommy”) of the Joust that spoke the non-sequitur or experienced “its” *Response* to the communication. Sometimes the deliverer of the non sequitur colours the communication and imagines that the Receiver has donned an “attitude,” which is why a President must be vigilant. This elicited disapproval will be followed by a row, which I find hilarious and I know the President (teacher) will Accept. However as a President you must not show it; you must allow the person’s RMAA to be serious. The President must stop the utter nonsense, resume the Joust.

and have the speaker deliver the same non-sequitur that called the Receiver's specific robotic-man-at-arms forth, until the Receiver can deny that "self" "its" "performance": a programme from "its" armour(y). The President may notice specifically the tone of voice of the Receiver and his or her shift in attitude. Often this performance is antagonistic, an attitude of pugnacity: a performance to elicit attention. If the Acceptor or Receiver of the communication cannot stop its RMAAic histrionics, paradox may need to be used by the President.

Example: Communicator: "Elephants fly, and the sky is green"

Receiver: "Yeah, Elephants fly, and the sky is green," she speaks with an attitude that shows she could care less about the stupid elephant, and the hell with the sky, which isn't green ever, you dumb ass.

Paradox. In a form of what you might call yoga, a Lady often uses this method of paradox to re-establish Access to Reality. She will have her students spread their arms in a round upward motion, breasts forced out, lungs filled, heads elevated, wearing an attitude of bliss and say, "what a horrible day." This is followed by having everyone assuming poor posture, slumped shoulders, and affecting a bad attitude and voicing, "what a wonderful day!"

So when the Receiver of the non-sequitur dons a robotic-man-at-arms' suit of armour(y) (attitude) and cannot stop its foolishness after many repeated attempt of Communicating and Receiving the non sequitur, it is instructed by the President to the Joust after Formally discontinuing Jousting to answer in the two extremes alternately: while wearing an evocative attitude reply, "yeah, so what?" And then this is followed by affecting an overly sweet, smiling façade and exclaiming, "Really? wonderful!" The President may instruct the Receiver to stand up and affect these two extreme attitudes alternately a number of times.

In training vast numbers of students, generally the intent of this Fourth Joust is not revealed to students, rather it is carried out and as the students begin to don (assume the attitudes of) the armour(y) of a specific "self," these are instructed in paradox. Because the book is to be complete enough for people to teach themselves and enter (form) covenant, I feel that I cannot afford you the specifics of this Joust. Despite knowing the possible outcome of this Joust, you should sink into and allow the RMAA that raises its ugly head to express when doing this Joust, if you sense "its" arrival (the Receiver's assumption of Asleepness).

The robotic-men-at-arms are but children and once "their" games are blatantly Sensed to be childish "they" escape to "Womb." Since a person's Will was required to do this, that robotic-man-at-arms does not take the Receiver's Consciousness or Grail with "it" to "Womb," rather the Castle made of sand dissolves.

The President has the Jousters remount their chairs and, using the same non-sequitur, begin again Jousting, attitude gone with that robotic-men-at-arms, the communication is Accepted. Next the roles are reversed and the Fourth Joust is continued.

At any point in a Joust, if or when a person becomes animated by one of its "selves" and is unable to demand fealty "it," then the Jousters, without any breaks, must return to Womb Jousting and then proceed up the sequence of Jousting to the point at which they last were interrupted by a robotic-man-at-arms. This is done only after many unfruitful attempts at Accepting the communication in (present) Reality. In this case it would be to the point of the same Communicator delivering the same non-sequitur to the same Receiver. Generally, though the faltering Jouster need only enter perfect posture, the attitude of Acceptance that is their Champion's and proceed.

The President can be viewed as a surrogate bairn attendant (someone with whom the RMAA of the moment can connect up, in order to elicit attention). This is why you should alternate between Jousting with a person of your own sex and one of opposite sex, as well as altering Presidents: male one time and female the next, from one day to the next. In this way you can demand fealty of various RMAA: your D(Dad)RMAA, B(brother)RMAA, M(mother)RMAA, U(uncle)RMAA, A(aunt)RMAA, Foster P(parent)RMAA, or S(sister)RMAA, according to which ones that are personally resident on the parapet of your Castle-unConsciousness.

Example: Communicator: "Elephants fly, and the sky is green"

Receiver: "Yes, I see that Elephants fly, and the sky is green"

Once again: if there is an attitude heard in the Receiver's voice or a childishly antagonistic voice heard or expressed, then the President presiding over the Joust declares a failure and insists upon a repeat of the communication and subsequent Acceptance of the communication by the Receiver. If failure continues the President may demand that paradox be practised by the Receiver. Generally what happens to the personality that is ruling the body of the Receiver gets more and more in control, so the president must step in and oversee the Joust as Judge. The President has the Receiver stand and a

the opposite attitude that the Receiver's personality had donned and utilised in order to call attention to "itself." This is followed by requiring the Receiver to re-enact the same attitude it assumed during the previous performance. The President requires that the Receiver re-enacts these opposing attitudes three times alternately. Then the Receiver remounts his steed (chair) and the Communicator starts anew. If however the "self" or personality remains, then the entire Jousting from First Joust to Fourth Joust must be repeated. Will and ultimately fealty are of course the endeavours.

President makes note of the Communicator's specific communication that induced the problematic *Response* so he can remind them both of the communication that was failed by the activities of a ruling "self," so that when they finally return to the Fourth Joust hours later the reason for all that practising Will is not forgotten. The "child" that caused the problem will come in to line and the example of this is viewed by all the "selves" seated on the parapet of the Castle-unConscious. Growth of Will is everything, all important.

The Fifth Joust

Jousters mount their chairs, assume an attitude of Acceptance/ being in (present) Reality. The First Jouster purports a question to be asked, while the Second is to repeat the question in a Real way as though it is its own, rather than a question purported by one of its RW(M)AA.. The question is asked as if it is its own, a request for knowledge by the Second from the First. Then the original devisor of the question has to decide if the question's delivery is asked in Reality. Once the question is asked it must be answered. In this way the communication is completed.

First: Do fish fly.
Second: Do fish fly?
First: No, fish do not fly.
First: Good, let's do another one.

All of life's endeavours are manipulations via transformation of energy. Such manipulations are the workings of Magic: Accessing more FORCE as a result of expending a little FORCE. Access via control over Cause and Effect. Communication is Cause and Effect in order to Access: aid, resources, information, knowledge, etc. A communication must have a beginning and an ending or result. Many people like the Relief Engineer could not communicate effectively. All communications were affectations and elaborately and strategically devised so as to elicit a lengthy period of attention that should a communication.

Another common weapon from a RMAA's armoury used to extend the period of attention is bad hearing or misunderstanding in which the "love" starved person automatically asks the person that communicated something to repeat. Testing of the listener's hearing reveals that nothing is wrong. Yet the listener affects an attitude of misunderstanding as a response to every initiated communication. Game. When initiating any communication with such a beast first yell the first three words of the communication at the top of your lungs. The remainder of the communication should be delivered at a low volume level. Do this for an entire day or whenever you need to communicate with this individual. Or by purposely murdering something blatantly absurd to elicit the programmed, "what did you say?" from the insane beast before every newly initiated communication, then proceeding with the communiqué in normal volume. In this way the listener can sense that they are unReal. They will usually use their own Will to alter this mis-programming of their robot and remain more Conscious.

Once the question devised by the First Jouster is repeated by the Second Jouster, but as if it were his/ her own, and is answered by the First Jouster, then the First says that it is all right to go onto the next one, and this ends the specific joust.

First: Do frogs jump.
Second: Do frogs jump?
First: Yes.
First: Good, let's do another one.

Note: Do about three or four consecutively before switching roles.

Often times the Second will fall Asleep and answer the question that the First wishes the Second to ask, instead of repeating the question in Real time. So the process must be re-run.

First: Do trees jump.
Second: No.
First: Flunk, ready to try it again?

In another situation, if the First Senses that the question is not well delivered or is delivered in an unReal way, the First may slip in a question itself, such as, "do you like coke?"

Understand that once the Second Jouster is so animated by a robotic-man-at-arms then it will repeat the question robotically. The First Jouster picks up on this and instead of acknowledging the question by answering it, thus ending the communiqué it asks that "self" a question. Example:

First: Do leaves fall?
Second: Do leaves fall?
(Noticing that the Second is Asleep)

First: Do you like coke?
 Second: Yes.
 First: Stop, you've fallen Asleep.
 First: Ready to try again? Good.
 Second: Yes. (They agree to begin anew)
 First: Do leaves fall?
 Second: Do leaves fall?
 First: Yes, leaves fall.
 First: Good, let's do another communication.

In some situations the new Joust, having again re-STIMULATED your RM(W)AA, who have been denied "love" the hours of Jousting (3 to 5 hours of jousting, initially) may try to have your body affect a "no" by wondering off. In other words a "self" takes over the body and thus leaves Reality. Or "it" may re-run some weapon out of "its" armoury. "it" knows very well what "it" is doing, but the *self* of the Second may not. Lapsing in attention will allow a "self" to rein. Often time break taken between the Third Joust and Fourth Joust opens a window for a "self" to re-man the Walls of the Dream Kingdom ruling the body. The person's *self* walks away from the Third Joust, but does not return in as Conscious a state.

The point here is that most people were never allowed to learn magic: Cause, Effect and Access. This has affected entire lives. The beast consistently is ruled by childish personalities, whom are performers attempting to live in a past in a world by hallucinated and concerted bystanders or surrogate bairn attendants.

A Communication should go from one person to another and is Acknowledged/ Accepted. Many people do not communicate with the person before them, but rather a "self" is interacting with a surrogate bairn attendant. "they" may always mis-communicated strategically, constructed a programme that required more attention and effort to confirm that communication was received. In the situation of the soft drink: many children "loved" getting a sugar, sensual tasting concoction as a present from a bairn attendant. Addicted to emoting, this beast readily fell Asleep re-living such a situation.

So what you should hope to do is learn to communicate, the same way you, as a Real person should deal with all of Reality. All tasks, all communications must be performed in as pragmatic way as is possible (Not by some RMAA using a weapon out of its armoury to elicit "love"). Communication and tasks that you (game) randomly or choose to undertake must be short and concisely delivered. You aren't communicating or doing a task to hold the attention or please a surrogate bairn attendant of yours. But neither are you here to elicit extended periods of attention from others. However, communication is magic, a means to Access Force by communion. Demanding fealty of your RMAA will teach you the nature of the beast. This knowledge can be invaluable for the manipulation of the dumb animals of whose group you once were associated, Home Robotics.

All these Formal Jousts must be mastered. This does not mean to say they are only mastered in Formal settings or classroom settings. Like all Jousting, gaming or any of the forms of paradox, you must practice communication in your everyday life as you learned to Do from the Fourth and Fifth Jousts. You must enter Champion whenever you find that you have fallen Asleep. You should particularly enter Champion before any communication. You should extend your visit to Reality utilising Access that was afforded you via Jousting. Eventually you will no longer be a mere sometime visitor in Reality rather you will become a part, an intimate part, of Reality.

The Coven Joust

This joust is done once a student or students can enter Champion at Will. It may be years before you are ready or able to do this Joust, and in some cases it may be never. This is dependant upon how bold (conviction) you are and how quickly your Will grows. I usually have a group ready to do this Joust effectively from the time of first meeting, and counting summary days, any where from three weeks to two months. Timing is very important. Sometimes I take one or two individuals on field trips to practise the Coven Joust before the group goes, because their incubation period has arrived. Still, they do the Coven Joust with their group later, for the group must become a coven or loving group (empathic). Generally I have eight or nine groups going at one time and I leave instructions and go between groups as well as doing the manipulations required by the void masters, which are done very quickly. These induced shocks are actually not time consuming, for they have already been determined by the masters. There is no second guessing. I go, I do and I am done. Such shocks may be what you call theft, murder, antagonism, hint on stocks to be bought, a kiss, a shove, a push, a marriage, a divorce, a win, a loss, an afforded interpretation of an occurrence, a misinterpretation or distortion of facts. Dreamers expend far too much of their time and personal power in accomplishing a task, for most are irrelevantly re-running programmes that are already overly sophisticated. Instead of: going, doing and being done; they dream, internalise, sleep walk. Magic is magic: Cause, Effect and Access. Whether it be Formalised Jousting, walking, having sex, or picking your nose. There is the correct way to do it, and there is the robotic way to do it. If your RMAA are good at a task, you would be foolish to hinder or thwart such a programme, instead witness it as it is simply and perfectly performed, appreciate/ love the performer. Allowing a programme to be re-run autonomically and unConsciously leads to “self” inflicted pain (accidents) or ruining equipment (doing a “no” to elicit attention). By being Aware of your RMAA’s activities you can guide that RMAA, demand fealty, and actually re-programme “it,” if need be. If your Awareness/witnessing falters, more negative and effective attention eliciting programmes will be re-run by a “self.”

The same way the council has me manipulate mankind via shocks, I employ shocks to manipulate my students. And you, in turn, should practise paradox and introduce shocks into your own lives in your endeavour to rule your robots and Access God. Jousting is a formalised use of shocks in order to become free. You do not need a teacher to Access Force. Ultimately it is the individual that must learn, who must acquire sufficient Will in order to Ascend. Being outrageous usually is histrionically motivated, merely another “no” as *Stimulus* in order to elicit a *Response*, which then is followed by the unConscious, and completely involuntary flashing of *Reward*. If you enter into a study group without a teacher, which is the reason for this book, do not hesitate to freely induce anomalies. Do not hesitate to shock your RMAA. Denial of bestiality is a huge shock.

I may suggest that a student walk backwards all day while performing simple chores. Perhaps if she is right handed, have her do tasks left handed. If a person has a Yankee accent I suggest them to speak with one of the Southern American ones. Preferably a student will design his or her own shocks and paradoxes. These require Will to maintain.

People imagine that teachers are infallible and are someone all knowing. Imagine “their” point of view. Most imagine that teachers are their bairn attendants. True enough, teachers can suggest, but each individual is responsible for its own actions. Never forget this. Only you can prevent Forest Fires. Denial can be an act of Will and basically that is what you must endeavour to do with your RMAA. Remaining Aware of “their” activities, denial by Will (enter Champion) will afford you insights into the creation of some of “their” more negative and more sophisticated armour(y). As you practise Will (denial and Awareness or self love), every slight slip in Awareness will result in oops, the more sophisticated programmes being re-run. Reasserting Awareness (Real self love) will reduce the “self” rerunning this newer and more sophisticated programme to a very simple “self” and enter Champion is a haven for (true) self to emerge and experience Reality. Often times these denials will afford the practitioner a flash of insight as to the creation of a specific weapon of attention eliciment. There are so many programmes tacked onto RMAA that it is far easier to enter Champion, maintaining one perfect husk for the self to peer out of and re-acquaint itself with Reality, and while

maintaining disIntegration, love the “self” as “it” performs re-enactments of the very simplest dexterities, rather than attempt to micromanage a “self” and over analyse “each.” Insights flood in as lapses in attention falter and are re-established. You should merely Accept these and enjoy the dissolving of plates of encumbrances. Let them go, and be gone for good, or you will hold others that are tact onto these.

Sex is an old and cumbersome manipulation of humanoids of this planet. Sex, up until now, was a necessary manipulation, for humanoids up until just lately were having difficulty procreating at a rate that offset the rate of fatalities. Entire civilisations can be manipulated if they are mere beasts, but Ascension and the ability to Access Reality/Absorb FORCE must be the individual’s endeavour. You can and must ultimately induce your own shocks. You must do things differently than you normally do them. If you normally have coffee in the morning, have tea. If you normally have guilt for lunch, try having just a little food. If you go into TRANCE when you talk to people: donning a suit of armour(y) that is all hunched over, try stopping this. Stand correctly Wilfully, be Aware of posture, breathing patterns, and control these Formally. If you emote when nudity is suggested or any sexual activity is suggested or alluded to, then you better do something about this as soon as possible. Anything that is that important is Pavlovian and imprisoning. Accept. Let it go. It is safe to say that our manipulation of humankind’s faculties, institutions, practises of marriage, mating, and procreation is a major stumbling block to Ascension. Sex is over rated. Unnecessarily so at present, actually at present, FATAL for Earth and its inhabitants. So almost all group study is initially carried on in the nude. Both because it is a shock, but more importantly because it induces students to be more Aware, at least until the shock wears off.

You will not Understand this until you become Real, but unReality, such things as the manipulation of entire civilisations can only be done to beasts, dumb animals. Dumb animals are what you are. As long as you can be induced to emote you are manipulate-able.

If as an individual you obsessively wash yourself excessively, or notice a distinct aversion to insects or people of a certain sex, race or certain situations, then you are Asleep, trapped in a Dream Keep. These aversions must be faced. For instance I systematically ask students if they have an aversion to a specific racial type and if they do I suggest they get together with that racial type and oo-ah at least once together. Acceptance. If you imagine that you can’t live with someone or something or can’t exist without a person or a chemical or habit, then you’re a Dreamer. You are captive. As long as you break no civil laws, then you should freely experience all. You should face all that induces emotings to occur and learn to Accept. I should say that if you find yourself in the company of a very insane beast-of-the-field, you must weigh the value of manipulating the beast with the amount of time and effort involved. This is a choice. We all have choices. But all aversions, particularly ones that have no Real foundation, must be Accepted. Insights abound from these.

If you normally open doors with your right hand, open them with your other hand. Yes, the left hand. If you usually don a frown when you “work,” quit “working,” smile and merely accomplish the randomly chosen task as if you were playing. If you normally close your eyes when you re-enact your sex programme, then stop leaving present Time. Have sex with the person that you are with, rather than recalling and reliving for the hundredth time that first sexual experience you had (or didn’t have (masturbators)) in some time past. If you normally... then do other than...

Laying siege your Castle-unConsciousness should be an onslaught. As a teacher I demand an onslaught, but many people are so very Asleep, submerged, that they can not free their self from the dungeon of “their” Dream Keep. SHOCKS. I use what is necessary: very big SHOCKS or very little shocks. The best shocks are those you impose upon your “selves.” Do so now, or your holy will steer you to hell. Hell does not exist, but hellish life experiences and debilitating and painful life long situations do, as does re-incarnation.

You have read all this many times before in other books perhaps, but you have done nothing with this knowledge, for you are just reading, which is another programme; entering a TRANCE and remaining there. No where. You are an inmate in no-where-ville, yet you are bathed in Reality, but you can’t smell the farts nor the roses. Here you are. Where? Reading this utter nonsense Seriously, which is your greatest mistake. Being serious. Seriously, you have a long way to go before you can taste, have a Real orgasm or make use or put into practise the Coven Joust. It may be useless for now, but here it is. Actually I have already described it.

It is enough to stress the importance of making what you learn/ Access via Jousting and the hints in this book part of your every day existence. Jousting, meditation, yoga, Imm, etc. are not to be left after three hours, only to TRANCE out of Reality upon interacting with the first beast or situation you happen upon. Extend the envelop. Golly, that sounds so futuristic (actually it is ancient). Make Reality your home. Leave the home of your Dream Keep. Release yourself from your bestiality.

Now, after that pep talk, continue.

The Coven Joust is also called the Sixth Joust. Six is the number of family, love, community, responsibility, communal passion or what you call compassion. Seven is the number of quiet Absorption, Spirituality.

In order to bring about the change of Octave in your being out of what exists, you must acquire a Sense of Reality. To Sense you must reduce your RMAA, the one of the moment, to a very basic “self” that is one with self, freeing from “its” dungeon your grail. Only then is Absorption able to take place. The self and grail are synonymous. Department of redundant department⁹. This means that you can’t allow your RMAA of the moment to hallucinate or colour the person(s) in view into a recollected bairn attendant or sibling. This is the major stumbling block. To stop emoting while you are not in the company of others is readily possible, but to Absorb while dealing with people who emote huge and readily absorbable amounts of life-Force is very difficult, for RMAA are seekers of touch-lovers or “lovers” of those who “touch-love” in its many forms. These RMAA scan Reality for anyone that fills the bill, and the body that RMAA of the moment animates is enslaved until the “love” programme is completed by the beast emoting. The Coven Joust is an exercise in calling forth specific RMAA of a beast, and then absorbing what that beast emotes.

These are but games, the practising of strategies, or exercises. This is why they are considered Formalised. The group of students are endeavouring to elicit a specific *Response* from a beast and then the group is there to nullify by Absorption the *Reward* of the subject enlisted, manipulated and induced to emote. The Jouster(s) can Realise how necessary disIntegration is, which is an occurrence involving the maintained enter Champion while at the same time loving (being Aware of) the RMAA of that moment, Consciously using “its” technology, the weapons of “its” suit of armour(y), to induce emoting in the subject and then the group and the Jouster(s) can Absorb this exuded life-Force.

Many Jousters get entangled in the strategies of their RMAA that they enlist during the Formalised Joust, for the RMAA, whose armour(y) the Jouster enlists to evoke from the selected beast’s emotings of their life-Force, takes over their body, throwing them into “its” dungeon.

To avoid this the Jouster must become expert in entering Champion and Accessing FORCE. This results from a growth in Will. When on its own and slowly as it practises the first Three Formalised Jousts he or she must learn to enter Champion and maintain this Access to Reality/ FORCE for extended periods of time. There is little difficulty or danger in conducting the Coven Joust, for basically all it involves is making a person(s) mad or happy, in other words, to emote readily, and then for the group of students to Absorb these emotings. The later, Absorbing, sometimes proves to be difficult, for the Jouster, her- or himself, often falls Asleep and emotes. Mirroring is a definite danger. A person cannot Absorb if one of its RMAA are emoting. While conducting the Coven Joust one must remain on the precipice of the Abyss yet at the same time in the Abyss. I have witnessed a number of Jousts that went awry. Sometimes I might stand and Absorb the mass of emotions as it takes its toll, or I might indulge in and exude a specific emotion that influences the mass.

To describe a Coven Joust: The group goes to a pub. The Jouster or jousters, for sometimes more than one person must be used to bring off the situational, entices a subject or subjects to re-run “love” programmes. Discussions about politics, religion, a girlfriend that did them wrong, the boss, that race, those sport participants, basically any subject that evokes emotings from the victim or subject can be used. The object of the Joust/ game is to entice a victim to state a stance on an issue and then lead the victim to emote, which is done by the Jouster allowing her or his RMAA that is expert in the use of controversy to re-run that programming. I require that the Jouster works towards a goal and specific conclusion of the action. In this case

⁹ Firesign Theatre We Are All Bozo’s on this Bus

it is to manipulate the victim to not only emote but to actually be led to disagree with its original statement. At this point the Joust is concluded, often the entire group just says no more and evacuates the pub.

In order to do this the jouster must use paradox. His or her expression and body language must evoke disagreement and thus emoting from the victim, while the content of her or his final discourse must be in agreement with the victim's original premise; in this way the jouster then asks the victim if he or she disagrees with the statement (while clothed in his or her RMAA's suit of armour(y) that re-enacts disagreement, antagonism and effrontery as elicitation). This evokes a "no" and literally the voicing of "no" from the victim followed by a negative restatement of the last statement that is made by the jouster, which is the opposite in fact to the context of his or her own stated counter statement to the victim's original premise.

Example: The chosen victim says that he believes that abortion should not be legal. The Jouster goes into the rights of the individual to choose, etc. Everyone knows the rhetoric and argument to be used. The jouster must continue the use of Grande Opinion of "self" and the victim's "self" until the victim is emoting readily, enraged, saying in a rage that abortion is murder. The Jouster perhaps is saying that so too is the slaughter of cattle, asking if the victim eats meat; after this is affirmed, then the Jouster accuses the victim of murder. On and on the emoting is elicited. With each antagonism that the Jouster voices an accompanying physical attitude is assumed that mirrors the attitude voiced, so that when the Jouster finally makes the statement "So, Abortion is wrong?" While still wearing an attitude of disagreement the victim, deep in TRANCE: says, "No, abortion is not wrong!" This ends the Joust, for the victim has voiced an opinion that is the opposite to its originally stated value.

For many students this is the first time they Absorb, via a coven. Eventually the group or the individual student will just go into a pub or any social gathering where people are emoting and Absorb the free energy. Once this ability is Real-ised, the individuals can do this at Will. I find that generally in any group one member seems to Access the free Force and eventually they all do so, that very trip to a pub. They do this without any aid from myself or the teacher, for by this time they are One, empathic. The entire coven camouflages the initial Accessing as does the effects of the alcohol drunk by the object of the Absorption. Out of all the many groups I have taught I have rarely had to initiate Absorption by these groups. They do this on their own. However on the few occasions where I teach a single person generally I must suck through them. This is dangerous for it can define me as a danger to the object of my Accessing and I can be branded as a something or other. This is because instead of merely Accepting/ Absorbing freely emoted life-Force, I am having to actually suck the life out of a victim and through the student. Don't imagine that a teacher is so very important, though. Anyone can act as a Lyv or Vly (Lady and Druid). Anyone. Vly means imaginary one or null. And learning to Access Force may take much longer without a teacher, but being via ones own Will means that there can and will be no unReal attitudes developed. In forming a coven or student group on your own you will need to additionally enlist a female and male to act as hosts: Lady and Druid.

The importance of the Coven Joust is to learn not to allow ones RMAA to draw oneself into TRANCE. The ability to form and maintain the Bridge between Reality and the unReal (where emoting goes on constantly), is the test. (Many get sucked into the "no"-ing of the victim and thus are caught in that beast's mirroring.) That Bridge is the number Eight, magic, Eorthe Magic. It is teetering at first, but with practise it can become the domain of the *self* and true- self, or Grail (capital G).

CHAPTER 17
Paradox

The use of paradox was briefly referred to in Jousting. Paradox. In a form of what you might call yoga, a Lady often uses this method of paradox to re-establish Access to Reality. She will have her students spread their arms in a round upward motion, breasts forced out, lungs filled, heads elevated, wearing an attitude of bliss and say, “what a horrible day.” This is followed by having everyone assuming poor posture, sloped shoulders, and affecting a bad attitude and voicing, “what a wonderful day!”

If during jousting a student’s “self” while donning an antagonistic suit of armour and perhaps uses sarcasm as armoury to elicit attention the person must be re-balanced. President should direct the beast to put on a sweet attitude. Then alternately the beast is directed to affect a sarcastic and antagonistic stance. These are alternated a number of times, then the joust is formally restarted.

As you lay siege your Castle-unConsciousness you will find that an onslaught is necessary. You must give it your all. You must be utterly Wilful. You don’t just stop drinking if one of your RMAA had you once pretending to be a drunk (one of your “selves” was a drunk and used getting drunk as a “no”). You do not only stop smoking if you pretended to be addicted to nicotine nipples. You do not just do Transcendental meditation, Do:In, or Kung Fu for the allotted one hour a day. You do not just have your one smile or laugh for the 24 hour period.

RANDOMNESS. Paradox. To maintain this through Will takes Conscious effort, which is the use of gaming.

Actually Yoga and many of the various forms of meditation are themselves paradoxes, for these methods of activity involve doing, breathing and moving in uncustomary ways. Thus Wilfully denying your bestiality.

Instead you drink three sips of an alcoholic beverage, or you smoke one drag on a cigarette in order to prove to your “selves” or the specific “pretender” that you are in command of your own body, then you ignore any efforts of that “pretender” to get you to go back to “its” or “their” old and familiar “self” “no”-ing or Tertiary programming. As for the use of TM, yoga, Tai-Chi, Imn or Do:In and other paradoxes of Physicality; you must extend the window of Awareness after these forms of paradox have made you Accessible. Even if this means going back and re-performing the system of Yoga, TM, etc. or Formal Jousting in order to once again Access FORCE.

Your time must be spent Absorbing in Reality.

As you first get started in your endeavour to awaken you will lack Will. The more time you spend Doing in the correct way, the more life-Force you will acquire, the sooner will you have sufficient Consciousness to Ascend. What does this mean? How do you start with a typical day means a great deal in your endeavour to become Real.

This is to increase your understanding. You have gone to sleep, in a bed if that is culturally normal. While in sleep you particularly have paid attention to dreaming, which follows the visitation of holy during the reunion of Holy Grail during shut down of your idiots or RMAA in deep (healing) sleep. Your life’s endeavour is to remain Conscious, rather than The dreaming Fool (0 (or 21st) Tarot Card). So, you want to awaken the moment you leave deep sleep and begin to dream. Dreaming is the process of the re-establishment of your RMAA’s control over your body after Deep (healing) Sleep. You prepared yourself for this denial of dreaming by having practised the paradox of Do:In or TM or Tai-Chi, etc. before you slept. In this way you quickly and immediately entered deep sleep. Many people eat sugar or foods containing it (or alcohol) before sleep, which may make deep sleeping nearly impossible and dreaming greatly enhanced, for sugar is food for thought, and thought or intellectualism is an incessant attempt of returning to “Womb” (alcohol 14 ATP’s of energy- 14 is the card of hedonism, the perplexed number of human-5). Then again many people lay about and fantasise before sleeping and slowly drift into their dreams, or so it seems to them. By doing a Wilful paradox (Yoga, etc.) you can balance and shut down your robots systematically. Deep sleep, visitation of the holy with grail or Holy Grail is then immediate.

In normal functioning, day to day robotics, you normally breathe autonomically with in-breathes as you exert or stress your muscles. Take for instance Do:In, a book by Michio Kushi¹⁰. In most regimens of paradox such as yoga or the exercises suggested in this book, you are asked to do the opposite: it is suggested to you to exhale in long controlled breathes that you are aware of, instead of short ones that you are not aware of taking, as you perform muscle usage (such as stretching). Normally you gasp for breath during the flexing of your muscles as you perform day to day tasks. For many, if you would continue breathing and functioning in an aware state (paradoxically for now) all day by concentrating upon your breathing and daily physical activities, you could shut down your robotics/ autonomics. By doing yoga or Do:In, you bring your self or grail closer to (present) Reality, which shuts down or actually shrinks your Dream Keep. Doing such, will actually remove vast amounts of armour(y), leaving your robotic “selves” simple and capable of only physical re-enactments of dexterities. Children are good at simple tasks. Your “children” can be allowed to perform mental dexterities such as formulating strategies for shopping or doing mathematical gamings, but judgements and constant internalising is utter nonsense, a process to numb and brings about utter nonSensing.

The entire point of sleep is not dreaming, rather this is a by product of the visitation of holy as your RMAA attempt to rebuild “their” Keep of Dreams after deep sleep. Deep sleeping is actually an intense time of repair and instruction. Many people go in and out of IT because of a battle for control over their grail by holy and their women or men-at-arms. By preparing for Holy Grail in Deep-sleep by any of the many types of paradox mentioned above, you remain Aware and Wilful. Once you sense you are dreaming you may choose to either awaken from it, for it is the non-sense of your RMAA reinstating “their” Realm, or you may randomly choose to game. This involves controlling the content of your dreams, finally you will get bored with this and decide of your own will to awaken from this nonsense. You do not lay there and day dream, rather you immediately rise, you may randomly begin your ablutions with cold water or perhaps you will lay down your prayer rug and begin the Do:In, or any other paradox of your choosing. Whether you do the cold (shower) bathing or go take a piss, you do not “no” in order to initiate these actions, rather they are done RANDOMLY and devoid of internal discussion and without emoting at each function’s conclusion. Correct breathing, posture and Awareness are maintained as you witness with Awareness every step and every movement that your “self” performs. In this way emoting cannot take place, for your self is alive, the child is simplified and does what all children do: remain in Absorption while being loved by you. Deep sleep is healing and instructive. Before RMAA can begin “their” rebuilding of the Keep, the holy must be done with its messages to the grail. What you experience the next day is influenced by this bedtime union of Holy Grail. When you first start the endeavour of remaining in (present) Time I suggest a cold shower as an act of Will, if you find that your ruling “self” is wondering (dreaming and internalising). Once you have its attention; make the water of normal temperature, if you like.

Perhaps you have noticed that your body is tense when you first begin trying to become Real during awakening from dreaming. You often stretch, which involves actually the re-enactment of that same state your “Womb”-er entered as it interacted with you, and as you have grown more and more perfect in your Asleepness, you have spent re-entering this TRANCE of fear and loathing by this stress-stretching. It begins as a yawn and then you find yourself doing it all day long unConsciously. You do it in your sleep and in the morning or after bed sleep. This too must not be performed and in fact need not be performed if you are being Real, for if you are in Awareness then you do not perform this re-enactment unConsciously. If you persist in this tensing activity your RMAA may have you develop arthritis, tendonitis, or any of a number of muscular ailments. Just don’t do it. If you are in and maintaining enter Champion, then you will not be in the TRANCE of any of your “desiring” RMAA, so you won’t re-run this short version of “love.” Understand that just because your mother, both while you were in the womb, and later when you got out of the womb, as well as all your other bairn attendants, entered a state of tenseness, stress and apprehension as they sought out or fabricated a “no” *Stimulus*, this does not mean that you too must also continue this programming in order to get anything done in your life.

¹⁰ The Book of Do-In copyright by Michio and Aveline Tomoyo Kushi in 1979, 1st Edition: Feb. 1979, Japan Publications, Inc. ISBN-0-87040-382-6

A yawn series is tensing then releasing: a “Womb”-ing in brief; the shortened form of running a “no” programme. People who are considered suffering from stress are addictively and incessantly re-enacting this programme (the yawn):

| | | |
|---|--|--|
| <i>Stimulus</i> | @ echo off <i>Response</i> | <i>Reward</i> |
| “no”-fear & loathing, apprehension, stress or anxiety | Touch-love (in its many and sophisticated forms) | Emote, Exude life-Force, the release of apprehension |

Despite claims of learned doctors, you neither need to dream nor yawn. If you want to stretch in order to rebalance then do a paradox of Physicality or get Real (naked) with a few of your fellow students and practise massage: Real touch love. A yawn is an involuntary re-enactment of a beast’s: *Stimulus*, @ echo off *Response*, followed by *Reward* as one of its RMAA practise “love.” A yawn is a form of “self” “love” (“self” *Stimulation*), or another short circuit that devours precious life-Force. That’s the third way I have said the same thing in this chapter. Did it get through to you?

Do:In or any such use of physical control and paradox will re-establish in you balance. It is significant that you continue your stay in Reality, which Do:In, Yoga, Transcendental Meditation (TM), Kung Fu, Jousting, etc. has afforded you. If you are in a work or living situation where it is possible, any time or the moment you Realise that you have once again fallen into the TRANCE of roborosis, merely re-establish Awareness by a form of paradox, an act of Will. Until you acquire sufficient adeptness/ Will to induce Accessibility to Reality via enter Champion, you will have to return to the use of paradoxes of Physicality, over and over again. You may imagine, (your RMAA will try desperately to thwart any attempts to send them packing) that to redo Do:In, to again do formal jousting or TM, etc. would be a waste of time, but actually it is time saving, even for large corporations. Understand that most of the games that are in the repertoire of your RMAA are “no”/ “love” programmes: these can cause large or small problems at work. These could be in the form of small cuts or large costly accidents, fights, dissension’s, or bad corporate decisions, or the alienation of corporate clients. All of these are wasteful, so the re-establishment of the ability to Sense Reality is always worthwhile. You will happily discover that the more time you spend in Reality; the more you will like it; the easier it is to return to Reality (enter Champion). As you practise Jousting more and more, the more readily will you Access Reality/ the FORCE. The best reason for Jousting is that it keeps you Real enough not to do a job impatiently, incorrectly, which means that you won’t have to do it over. Granted, you will appear to be working slower, but this will be energy efficient, both in regards to your personal power or how you feel at the end of the day, as well as in accomplishing the task at hand. Understand that the armoury of a given RMAA has as part of its repertoire many convoluted and sophisticated “no” programmes. Many of which are grossly counterproductive and often down right dangerous or even fatal when performed after long periods of “love” deprivation/ Wilful enactment of enter Champion.

If you do in fact Wilfully leave your armchair of intellectualism and endeavour to Access Reality by performing the jousts, you will discover intensity. This too must become the non-attitude of enter Champion. In order to perform a joust effectively requires WILL. To finish the first three jousts will require that you develop intense Will. A by-product is intense AWARENESS. Watch a child of four or five. It Absorbs every atom of Reality. That is what jousting is for, to re-establish Access to Reality.

Memory of shift. As you Wilfully re-establish Access by use of a paradox you should note your being’s (attitude) coloration. After doing a paradox, Accessing Reality and then having one of your “selves” attempt to re-establish “its” reign, you can STOP “its” re-immersion in the moat by re-assuming Access, which is a matter of shifting back to the coloration or (non-) attitude that allowed Access. This is called enter Champion. Eventually anytime you wish to STOP a “self” or Real-ise that you have faltered in Access of Reality, you merely enter Champion. Each time a “self” rules you while you are unAware and allow “it” to rule your grail, problems can arise. After a long time of re-establishing Access/ re-establishing your control over/ love of your “self” of the moment, you will eventually alter the programming of your “selves.” This is done axiomatically.

Shifting into enter Champion eventually takes milliseconds. As soon as you enter Champion your being fills with power and your Sensuality becomes Real, you have Access to God/ Reality/ Force. It feels quietly wonderful and balanced.

Eventually your control over your “selves” will increase and at this point tasks are but games. This gaming takes place with intense Conviction/ Awareness, so if you like, want to indulge, you may decide to see how quickly you can perform the task. Impatience is much like alcohol to the alcoholic, you must test and use rapidity as you maintain Awareness. This is gaming at its peak. Or perhaps you wish to practise understanding and a mental dexterity. Doing math or designing a better mouse trap. Gaming is a matter of allowing and witnessing a “self” as “it” performs a dexterity/ re-runs a programme. The beauty of gaming in mental endeavours is the fact that you have Access of collective special knowledge. Generally those or a once deceased fellow human that liked inventing will guide you in your invention. This is why it is called Access, for in Reality you can Accessed the bodiless or deceased Earthlings. Your planet has a Council, which is why the Jed decided that your planet and you must be given the correction, which is this book. I am very proud of you, my creation (I am a behaviourist and geneticist for the energy and mineral acquisition company Lucifer, and responsible for the development of you creatures). I think you will continue doing what I designed you to do, which is destroy the atmosphere on your present planet so that it can be mined. A Council is a group of deceased Grails whose Holy’s Ascended only so far due to their attachment to this adopted planet and its fellow beings. Whether you take the correction to heart is no longer my corporation’s problem after this book is published.

During the 4th or 5th Joust, when you practise communicating, a jousting may do one of its RMAAic attitudes so as to concert a “no” and a “love” scene, sort of starting its own soap opera. By getting the jousting to over react on purpose or Wilfully in both extremes the absurdity of the RMAA is plain to Sense, apparent to all, but in particular to the “self” itself. It is important that you Understand how unimportant your stupid Pavlovian Perverts are, and it is even more important that “they” know how ridiculous you Consciously Know “they” are, actually. Your RMAA are only good for simple mental and physical dexterities. RMAA should never be allowed to make value judgements, for “their” worlds are filled quite often with “bairn attendants” whose attentions are most effectively elicited by your RMAA directing you to do a “no.” Recall that Grande Opinion is a typical “no” to elicit “love.”

People indulge in worry. Camaraderie, quite often among Pavlovian Perverts, is group “no”-ing. In order to eliminate any possibility of enTRANCEment be sure to Accept negative inferences by being unSerious. Generally the Champion should be Accepting of the perversions of the beast. For instance someone will relate a news item to me concerning the beast, such as rape, murder, extermination of one race by another or any re-running of the “no” programme. Upon hearing this I, being in Reality and maintaining Champion, Accept. Sometimes I suggest that a student laugh at insanity. I have been told by students that they cannot laugh at the pain of others. But this is not the point. In order not to be a beast and not to mirror the Asleepness of Pavlovian Perverts it is very important to remain in (present) Time. If the student identifies with the emotings of others, then this will become the student’s RMAAic “no”/ *Stimulus* required to Dream. With laughter or a smile and the accompanying attitude they may still be emoting, but such an emotion is far less wasteful than the more serious emotions of disgust, which can loop as *Stimuli* for more programmes and flashings of emotions, which is called the “love” programme hatred. To smile and even to go so far as to laugh is paradox, Wilfully executed. Eventually the student will learn Acceptance; first she or he must learn unSeriousness. Accepting that animals will be animals, Accepting that male dogs may raise their leg to pee, Accepting that “no” programmed beasts-of-the-field enjoy “no”-ing other like creatures, and that they perfect this “no”-ing to hatred, is very important, for if you emote you are part of the problem rather than the answer. What you would call a greener or bleeding-heart-liberal came to Earth. You know it as Christ. It taught one thing. It had one message. Accept, do not emote (but don’t stop teaching these creatures Magic).

I often have students do things that both demand discipline but above all introduce SHOCKS to their Sleep-walkers (RMAA). I might demand that a macho-man lay a big kiss on another male with tongue in throat and the works, just to SHOCK his idiotic RMAA. To have a student that is definitely heterosexual go to its

home town and portray itself as a homosexual or visa-versa is a shocking paradox. Home town: because this too eliminates self-importance. For instance you might talk with a Spanish accent if you are a Frenchman for extended periods, or perhaps date a Caucasian if you were trained to be very prejudiced against such a racial type. Some people have an aversion to certain things, people, places and situations. These must be sought-out and experienced. Many of these are holdovers from previous lifetimes or childhood experiences (one in the same). Hang-ups in regard to sexuality is the most common.

For instance one woman in her last life time died slowly on the battlefield over a few days as she watched the bugs crawl in and out of her wounds in her left ear, left side of her face, and what was left of her legs, and so she developed an aversion towards bugs. I gave her insects as pets to play with until this paradox balanced out the aversion. This required the use and practising of Will. She eventually experienced a vivid insight finding herself on that same battlefield. A RMAA that re-enacts a programme of addiction too needs to challenge its RMAA and demand “its” fealty. Otherwise such an addict is holding onto a Tertiary/ self-pity programme: trapped in a short circuit or Dream Keep.

Laura, you know the type: young, honest and naive. Someone once accused her of being a guileless hick, or she over heard someone putting her down to others in an alienating way for being “so plebeian.” Both colour, are subjectively derived, more ones own idea of ones self than something tangible. All that can be said is that she was gullible, and subsequent to that episode one of her significant RWAA has been incessantly trying not to be so plebeian ever since. Many children experience this sort of episode in their life. They find themselves in a strange environment, one in which none of their “selves” (expert liars/ hallucinators) can ‘make familiar’. When embarrassed (just another “no”), a plate to the armour of one of their robotic-women-of-arms is developed. That RWAA from that point on designs not only an attitude (emotional), but also values (intellectual) and (physical) mannerisms, including armoury that “it” imagines will make up for this imagined inadequacy. Laura, hilariously became very sophisticated. I say hilariously, for her RWAA spoke like a snob, a twit. That RWAA designed “its” “self” into this ridiculous character that everyone but itself laughed at behind “its” back. Her RWAA put on airs, becoming haughty. I recall getting “it” drunk in a high class restaurant so that “it” could be in full view and then getting “it” to emote incessantly by my acting as plebeian as possible. With a very straight face I said, “Let’s get a whole bottle of wine, you can always take what we don’t drink home with you.” And toward the end of the meal, “Do you want any of this?” This was making reference to the fact that she might want the restaurant to package food that we were served that we could not consume, and take this home with her. “it” noticeably cringed. “it” had her emote readily over this.

A lot of students initially would “no” the fact that I *Stimulate* unsuspecting Pavlovian Perverts to emote, only to draw free force from their “antics” due to the nature of their robes. I often must colour or redefine the situation before students stop allowing their idiots to “no” my endeavouring to teach them the nature of the beast, while not allowing them to become so serious.

Accept the beast and the antics of its “selves.” (As for your own, it helps to laugh at the antics of the RMAA of the moment) By doing what is a “no” or unacceptable and paradoxical to a RMAA of that moment, “it” can be *Stimulated* to be natural and thus emote freely. These are beasts-of-the-field, they are stupid, predictable and entirely Asleep, so can be readily manipulated. Hitler manipulated entire populations by the use of paradox.

If a child has a nightmare involving being chased by a tiger the simplest thing to do is to use paradox. Ask the child to recall a happy memory that is readily available to its memory such as having that delicious cool crispy apple the day before at that magical place: Grandmother’s house. As it recalls emotionally: squeeze her left knee. Then get her to recall the nightmare of the “tiger” and as she emotes again: squeeze her right knee. Shift her back to the fun and delight at “Granny’s” followed by a squeeze on that left knee as she emotes. Sequentially repeating these recalled good and bad emotional instances accompanied by saying the appropriate “Granny” or “tiger” and squeezing the appropriate knee (at least 3 or 4 times), will delineate the two emotional

(unReal) extremes. While squeezing both knees at once and saying “Granny Tiger”; will result in re-establishment of balance, so child can go back to sleep¹¹.

People’s RMAA imagine all sorts of utter nonsense. “they” have pride, ideals, values that are a result of robotics (programming), part of their RMAA’s illusion. These may be good or they may be bad. Above all the individual must become Conscious of their RMAA’s intellectual aspect of “its” suit of armour(y). So very much, that a person values, is Grande Opinion, so they are readily changed by a given RMAA in order to elicit attention via controversy.

If you are indulging a RMAA, then you are Keeping FORCE at bay. Paradox can SHOCK any RMAA to disIntegrate and allow access to Reality, which is where the FORCE can be Accessed.

Formalised Group Jousting is another example of the use of paradox. Here is an example of that endeavour and the reasons it is practised. Emoting, recall, is the opposite of Absorption of life-Force. To put it another way: Spirituality or preparation for Ascension requires that you refrain from throwing your precious life-Force away by indulging in emotions, which are synonymous with the *Reward* portion of a conditioned response. The entire reason for practising formalised jousting is to enable you to enter Reality. Once you have Sensed Reality, it is believed that It is where you will want to remain, which happens to be the only state that allows you to Absorb. Knowing how to joust thus, how to Wilfully Access the FORCE formally in an exercise of paradox such as TM or jousting, etc., it is hoped that you will not merely learn how to Access at Will Reality anytime that you Sense that you are enTRANCED by one of your RMAA, but wish to live and be bathed in It. Eventually enter Champion will be readily practised by you. Formalised Group Jousting is carried on for a number of reasons. Actually there is only one reason, which is Access, but the lack of spirituality of white race, whose values and methodologies predominate, so that today’s people all over the planet overdeveloped technology, has made you verbose, sophisticated, heavily armoured, and top heavy, which is why I bombard you with repetition in this book. Group (which eventually becomes coven) is used, for it supplies the Balancing via Absorption or what you might call witnessing: the Absorption of emoted life-Force by the passive members of the Group or coven during a Group Joust. Six or Tribalism is the necessary step to the Seven of Spirituality, which is the necessary step to raising an Octave or Eight, (Templar) Magic.

Generally from a group, a templar or jouster is chosen randomly to act as the instigator of emotings in a Coven Joust . Homo robotics in most instances is “no” programmed so in formalising the Joust it is ended or completed once the victim, any hapless beast-of-the-field, is tricked into disagreeing with its original premise verbally. For a given area, wherein a Group is convened, a teacher will require certain homework performed, which involves the study of the local flavour. A book or list of possible flavourful characters or possible ‘victims’ of the area are supplied to students. They can do their numerology charts, astrology charts, etc., but preferably these characters should be observed first hand. The use of numerology, more over their learning of these crafts, are analogous, for all must Realise that Reality is ordered. All is orderly and stable, rather than the chaos and confusion that these students grew up to know amongst mis-programmed Homo robotics. These victims are stupid Pavlovian Perverts, not unlike the students themselves. This is always stated to each group, and is a constant reminder, for students often tend to get lost in self-importance particularly as they become proficient in performing Templar tricks.

Your planet has two religions: the one for Ascension or the LAW of ONE, and the LAW of Octaves, which is what politicians, carneys, managers, priests and priestesses practise. The Temple has eight sides, it is a place to manipulate the Four Eorthe Elements, rather than a place to learn Ascension. Man’s number is the same as all beasts: Four. Human, however is a Five or Sensing Being. Most people are Fours and so are readily manipulated by Priests or Templars. Practising Templar Magic is just that, practise. Gaming in this way is merely a practising of the process of Accessing life-Force/ Absorption on an individual basis. You may or may not need to become a practising Templar in order to better learn Absorption, but voider schools exist for the sole purpose of manipulating mankind so that it will become human and survive periodicity and feed the chain of

¹¹ Frogs Into Princes : neuro linguistic programming/ by Richard Bandler and John Grinder. Real People Press, 1979

Ascension, so doing magical manipulation or Temple magic is an important weapon or tool to Understand. The practising of paradox in day to day existence is a key to remaining Real. Whether you indulge in the more formal paradox of meditation, jousting with a friend, spouse or fellow students matters little. What is significant is the use of paradox in everything you do. These are acts of Will. Smiling and Accepting your job. Accepting that beasts will be beasts, which involves remaining Real when you have related to you an emotionally charged account or witnessed an emotionally charged occurrence. After you have done your formal paradox to re-establish Access to Reality, you must extend this window or stay by witnessing (loving) the “self” that does any physical or simple mechanically mental act of dexterity: becoming a simple child again while Absorbing Force (disIntegration).

I often have trouble with certain students that are human. The problem is their heavy headedness. Initially many are or have been named by their society to be “sensitive,” actually these are potentially empathic people, who might make good healers, but this ability is not comfortably accepted or acceptable in a culture of “no” programmed beasts. These humans use dreaming (intellectualism) as buffers for their Sensitivity, which becomes vulnerability and eventually these individuals perfect their Tertiary programme: self-pity. These same self-pitying idiots imagine it is bad to manipulate others, for they have themselves often faced people whom have tried desperately to encase or even entomb them in Asleepness (manipulate them into playing a role in their own personal hell or Dream Keep). Understand that Homo robotics kills for pleasure, enjoys the pain of others, “loves” to antagonise, to “no” obsessively in order to elicit “love.” Sometimes I take these excessively sensitive individuals out of the Group and let them see, Sense the baseness of these beasts that they, or rather a part of them pretends to have qualms about manipulating. (Understand that no one can be too Sensitive except in relationship to fellow Pavlovian Perverts if they tend to get trapped in a mirror of these beasts)

By going to cock fights or visiting a ghetto bar and having them Sense as one beast “loves” another beast in fist fights, they come to Understand the beasts and themselves. They slowly lose there indulgence in emoting, mirroring the victims. Growth of cynicism helps. This is replaced by an ability to Sense, Access, and more importantly Absorb and Accept even the darkest exudations. Turning this freely emoted life-Force in this process away from the man-created force called the devil, and instead Accepting these emotings into their being as force, they become cleansers on the, what you would call, psychic plane of your adopted planet. This is the other reason for these Voiders to become proficient in Group Jousting. Sensitives characteristically give or exude life-Force readily, which is why being a sensitive is synonymous with being a healer. However, unless Sensitives learn to Absorb, they quickly deplete their stores of Force. Oddly enough as the depletion occurs in Homo robotics of this kind their robots or RMAA simplify as the human’s Force is depleted, and this allows them (not “them”) to Access. Sometimes they learn to Access a bit better, but rarely in a sufficient amount or gain enough Understanding of how to recreate this Accessing ability. In those that do gain a wee bit of understanding of Accessibility via this catastrophic low or depletion near death, they have remaining their insanity or perverted bent. This can result in very powerful exudations that are bent and perverted, a harm to everyone in their ken: a dark and evil presence. These humans are as unConscious of their power as they are of their insanity. You have heard and read of these.

A fellow I’ll call Footballer was just accused of murdering one of these. It was a woman that had learned to Access a bit of Force after emoting almost all of her life-Force in her martyrdom, a short circuit. This then simplified her RWAA and she (unConsciously learned) was able to Absorb. As she Absorbed she was empowered and her RWAA took over again. With each emotionally induced depletion greater Access-ability was learned and the greater harm she could do. She “loved” to be abused, and by “loving” this way, she was eventually murdered, for her ability to concerte others, particularly her ex-husband Footballer, grew stronger. While she died a potentially powerful person, she did not know of her increased power. You might say that she actually committed suicide, for she got what she was trained to want by her “selves.” Granted her parents taught her how to “love,” but if she had developed Will and practised it, then she may have developed sufficient Understanding to reprogramme her robotic-women-at-arms by demanding her RWAA fealty. Enough on martyr’s or experts in the re-running of the Tertiary Root of evil. She perfected the elicitation of what her

RWAA wanted, to the point of it being fatal. Still murderers must be killed and thieves must pay back every cent. Magic must be taught: Cause, Effect and Access.

Paradox in the 6th Joust. The Jouster or Templar chooses the beast(s) that is (are) to be the victim(s). When it is time for a student to be the lead jouster or focuser of the group, they must begin by giving a compendium of the Quest at hand along with directions and roles to be given certain members of the group. There are those that say very little and merely direct the Group to follow them with only a few directions to individuals, who may be used to set the stage. Then there are those that make very elaborate jousts that not merely Access, but also may instruct individuals in the group. Basically, besides the focuser, the rest of the Group are to Absorb the life-Force exuded by the victim as a result of the words and actions of the Jouster/focuser.

Some Formalised Group Jousts are quite elaborate, some are instructive to many within the Group. There are two reasons for this. As a person spends more of its time in Reality via self awareness and by performing Acts of Will, what is necessary and correct replaces doing Pavlovian “no”s. Another thing takes place to make these lessons inadvertently instructive to members. As these people spend time as a group, an empathy for one another takes place. Axiomatically what one does aids everyone in their striving toward Ascension. The group becomes a coven, which means that it can accomplish far more than twice the same number of lonely individuals, at least. Within yourself your RMAA or in the case of a woman, your RWAA must become like a coven well loved and appreciated, but above all each must be witnessed, and held in your Awareness. Only in this state of Realness can you Absorb and remain Accessing Force.

Understand that the school called the knights of the round table is considered a new school. It developed as the need to help Romanced Europeans re-enter coven: from a Castle-unConscious society to a Tribal Conscious one. Only in Communion can Ascension be Realised. The esoteric religion that the Essene taught was synonymous with coven. This book is presented to help the deranged Dream Keepers Access.

There are many variations on a theme but here is a typical scenario of a Formalised Group Joust. The Group goes to a local pub, not as a group but rather as couples or threesomes and as individuals, they seemingly have no connection as a group to those non coveners in the pub, but as the joust gets underway they become strategically positioned, sort of an audience for the victim and each a jouster. The victim “loves” the attention. As the victim(s) emote these members will Absorb. Witnessing an act is Absorption (hopefully controlled). The Jouster will strike up a conversation. This might be about politics, laws concerning abortion or drugs, religion, etceteras to induce emoting.

Recall that Pavlovian Perverts are not motivated by what they believe, or a cause or what is right or wrong, but rather by “how can I get attention” and more over “how long can I extend this elicitation of attention.” An Homo robotics’ RMAA as it sophisticates it redefines: crawling toward the danger or precious heirloom as *Stimulus* in the Primary Root of evil programming, into the “no” of controversy. Such a RMAA collects data throughout its existence to use as ammunition in any future chance to carry on and extend “eye and word-touch-love” or “reprimand-word-touch-love” during an argument. This pub ‘scene’ is no different.

The Jouster in her conversation with the victim takes a statement of the victim’s position and by facial expression, vocal as well as emotional attitude, induces the victim to emote in discussing his position. For example let us say the victim is a chauvinist. The Jouster is a woman. And she heats up the argument by over simplifying and over dramatising the feelings of the chauvinist. The statement is, “Then you believe women are supposed to be subservient to men?” The arguments are presented and certain members of the Group whom earlier were enlisted to take pro and con develop into an audience. An audience, the victim “loves” an audience. When the victim makes a statement a certain segment of the Group shows agreement (dons such a suit of armour(y) or attitude while remaining Real (disIntegrated), while the other segment shows disagreement (dons such a suit of armour(y) or attitude while remaining Real (disIntegrated)). As the argument continues there seems to the victim to be two camps. Particularly there are both males and females siding with the two points of view.

Once in the thick of the “no”-ing/argument, the Jouster will verbally agree with the statement in her spoken context while showing or wearing a physical and facial expression and using a tone of voice that

remains “no”-ing the victim’s position, and the appropriate segment of the audience too “no”s or agrees with the statement not for its content but rather for the Jouster’s delivery and expression. The statement is spoken with a tone of disagreement, “Women are supposed to be subservient to men?” Followed by the question and delivered with an attitude of disbelief, “You are trying to tell me that women aren’t supposed to be subservient to men?” “What an asshole!” And the victim, because he is enTRANCED by the “no”-ing, reacts by “no”-ing the statement. He screams, “Yes, women are not supposed to be subservient to men!”

This is the end of the Joust, for the victim has verbally disagreed with his original statement. Even though this is so, quite often the Jouster will go even further with this, as will the supposed audience. Now they switch sides and expressions. The idea, now that the Joust is over, is to get the victim to emote significantly. After all he is nothing but a Pavlovian beast doing the most “loving” thing it knows: emoting after “no”-ing. Whether he induces himself to re-run familiar “love” programmes, which end in the *Reward* of exuding his life-Force by the Tertiary Root, or whether the Jouster induces this beast to re-run “love” via Grande Opinion, matters little. The Group, including the Jouster, is attuned to the victim. By changing sides (attitudes) they SHOCK the victim and his RMAA has him emote significantly. At this time the Group remains in enter Champion (disIntegrated) and draws as much life-Force as the victim is (non-Willingly or autonomically) going to freely exude. Such a Group can Absorb to the victims death, but does not, for such a Group is six: responsible, which is the function of coven and the system of Witnesses. Whether you are buying an orange or performing any task that uses a robotic programme you must remain Real and intensely Aware. This is very different to a Pavlovian Pervert’s day to day activity. It is paradoxical in fact.

Understand that the beast is addicted to “love,” which means that it loves to “no,” or “no”s to relive (*Stimulate*) “love” programmes. The statement that the jouster used has the magical word “not” and it is accompanied with the “no”-ing empathy of the victim’s seemingly enlisted cohorts as well as seeming dis-belief of the Jouster and the “selves” of those people that agree with her. There has been set up a systematic *Stimulus Response Reward* that the victim sees as a familiar “no” programme. As a small boy the victim studied the use of Grande Opinion. He’d be in the company of his parents or other bairn attendants while they ‘discussed’ or “no”-ed one another. The way it worked was one bairn attendant kept repeating its “no,” while the other stuck to a counter “no.” Later the boy might have tried to use this technology for the elicitation of an extended period of “eye-touch and word-touch-love” by refusing to eat, and to have developed all of a sudden a Grande Opinion concerning Brussels sprouts, which it previously ate for months before this. This is the use of Grande Opinion.

Before I leave this example of Formalised Group Jousting and how you must relate it to your day to day practising of paradox there is a bit more you must come to Understand. The point of jousting is that those who joust do not fall Asleep, which is to say that they are not drawn into “no”-ing (mirror) when and if their resident “self” identifies a *Stimulus* (a “no”). Rather the idea is to enlist a “self” to do what comes Natural (disIntegrated) while *self* and (true) self witness and thus love “it,” but allow it to do, and remain utterly Aware and Conscious of what “it” is doing. This Formalised Group Jousting involves strategic use of Will: the Jouster must have one foot planted steadily in Reality, while the other foot is in a suit of armour(y) allowing one of its RMAA to use its knowledge of the “love” programme in order to elicit emotings from the victim’s RMAA, which is ruling the victim at the given moment. In this case the victim was a male and the Jouster was a female, so the victim’s S(sister dealing)RMAA and M(mother dealing)RMAA were animating him alternately. He was simply reliving an old situational “love” programme. The Jouster is allowing one of her RWAA, in this case, her BRWAA to re-enact previously devised armoury, but not to exude her precious life-Force. She as well as her Group members remain in (present) Time Absorbing the emotings of the victim and those that are also emoting around them as these become enTRANCED by their R(W)MAA and flash *Reward*. This is actually the most important lesson of the Joust, of all Acts of Will: to remain Real and to always Accept/ Absorb. After years and years of bestial programming, and years and years of believing that “love” programmes must end with the excitement or emotionalism of a bairn attendant grabbing them up from a danger or no-no with the release of great emotion and enthusiasm, it is difficult to let this preconception go, and instead Accept the silly and uneconomical release of life-Force as the stupid Pavlovian Perverts around you replay this association.

Now you know of paradox. Existence is far simpler to more complete beings. We simply would call what you need as paradox, yet in your vernacular there are many types of paradox: physical, mental and emotional. And under these there is humour, or the emotion of crying when laughter is expected. I have called it unSeriousness or randomness, yet these are all terms for the same thing. You “love” to be confused and sophisticated. This is so boring. Writing a book, which I have spent a great deal of energy making complex and sophisticated, thus requiring your attention, seems ridiculous to me, but this is what you seem to need. By over doing this sophistication perhaps you will come to see how absurdly wasteful your indulgence in your Pavlovian nature is, truly.

Paradox is simpler, still, for it is an Act of Will: the practising of the LAW of ONE.

For those of you that are unable to entice anyone in your ken to Joust formally with you, I suggest you make a game of every endeavour, a game not a (“no”) chore. Attitude is everything! Your enter Champion must be Accepting, which means that you must affect an attitude of unSeriousness to the point of being unassuming and thus Absorbing/ receptive/ Accepting. Here is a good way to start your day or re-establish Access. On day when you awaken in the morning for a few minutes try to focus. Remain lying down. Look at an object. Remain focused upon an object for twenty minutes. As you do so, what happens? Do you find one of your “selves” having you go back to sleep or go back to dreaming? Do you find yourself having trouble remaining focused upon the object? Can you not sit still? Does one of your RMAA want you to think, to look elsewhere? Does “it” have you fidget or dream? Perhaps internalise? Concentrate on controlling breathing, become Aware of this simple activity. Twenty minutes seems no time but it is aeons for little children. Particularly if you refuse them “their” dreaming. The Awareness of breathing helps a great deal. You will find that the more time you spend in Consciousness throughout your daily life that the easier that twenty minutes are to remain in Reality.

(This is why you must DO, instead of letting one of your RMAA, or in the case of a woman, RWAA have you dream walk, talk, crap or whatever. Witness your “self” of the moment as it performs any and all programmes, for this self love will simplify “it” towards grail and Access to Reality and the Force that is there to be readily Absorbed. DO quietly, patiently, and happily with Awareness. Attitude is the un-attitude of enter Champion.)

As you DO, control your breathing: pronounced inhalation, filling and inflating your lungs completely, followed by a longer and flowing out-breath. As the exhalation dwindles, is completely exhausted, hesitate, enjoy the quiet, the stasis. Then begin to inhale again. As you continue to do this, the awareness is extended, you will discover it is much easier to remain focused on Doing if you improve your posture. This just feels right and comfortable. This will remove vast plates of armour from that R(W)MAA of the moment and simplify “it” to the union of Real self-and- *self* or grail. Maintaining good posture and remaining Aware of breathing patterns are paradoxical to what you normally do, yet while being witnessed the “self” does not mind the enforced denial of “its” programming as long as you are attentive of “it.”

Once you have maintained focus upon the object of your Will, you will become very comfortable. You will have noticed that your eyes easily focus upon what you are doing and where you are doing it. Slowly rise and begin your day continuing to breathe in this way, while you make your elimination’s, have your bath, dry off, clothe your body, walk, make your breakfast. Any time you find yourself Asleep. Persevere. Focus and begin your breathing exercises/ enter Champion becoming Aware of your “self” of the moment as it does any and all activities. Be your own ruler. Stop blindly doing the will of some recalled bairn attendant. Focus always Wilfully in Reality. Be Here Now. If you remember thy “self” always, you will have “its” love, and attention and visa-versa. Reality will come flooding in, for out of the protective gaol self will emerge, will become one with the “self” of the moment along with *self*, which is the part of you that is doing the witnessing and remains Real and Conscious due to this union of Three.

CHAPTER 18
Speech

Speech is a task accomplished by the re-running of just another “love” programme. Like all programmes the person is taken out-of-(present) TIME, or put another way, enters the TRANCE of talking whenever it must speak. A greeting that *Stimulates a Response*, Controversy, sarcasm, antagonism, Grande Opinion are all merely sophistication’s of the “no” *Stimulus*. And in order to conjure these situationals the enTrancement of talking is utilised. enTrancement.

All programmes performed by the RMAA are performed by the re-running of previously learned or devised programmes, taking the speaker out-of-(present) Time. Speech is in no way exempt from this, for it is another task, accomplished as are all tasks by the re-running of “love” programmes. Specifically, the *Response* of these programmes takes the person into a TRANCE state and out-of-(present) Time; particularly to the time frame of learning to talk. If the “no” programme is taught earlier than speech, which in most cases it is, and speech is not allowed to be free associated, then even speech becomes part of the armoury of a R(W)MAA. RMAA know so many dexterities, programmes that you need in order to function, in order to survive, but they are motivated by “how can I get attention,” or more specifically, “how can I get touch-love (in its many forms).” As I have said many times neglecting to love a RMAA by witnessing its performances and thus simplifying “it” to Grail can prove injurious and even fatal. If you not only witness, but guide or participate in the control of speech or in the control of any of the RMAA’s dexterities or performances, then you will be demanding fealty of “it” and thus regain utter love of “it.”

Note: Always remember whether an Homo robotics is crawling on the floor toward the negative or speaks negative ideas is no different; still this is based upon the same original misprogramming: the Primary Root of evil.

People with speech impediments must design Champions that speak precisely, be an attitude of perfection. They should consider themselves lucky to have such a lesson. Commonly, as a child and thus love starved, or so “it” imagined, was more than happy to speak wrong and be “reprimand-word-touch-loved” (a further sophistication or outer plate of a RMAA’s suit of armour) or made fun of. Merely hearing itself speak incorrectly (*self* listens to a ruling “self” speak) fuels the *self* with *Stimulus* to ‘feel’ “loved.” This becomes a death loop, and the *self* incessantly “no”s”loves” the “self,” so the “self,” desirous of “love” builds a pattern of speaking incorrectly. Speaking incorrectly becomes a major “love” device of the armoury of the Dream Keep. This RMAA, the one equipped with the speaking “love” programme, continues to autonomically and unConsciously re-run this armoury. In people without a speech impediment, still the armoury of speech is made, for it is a device that can readily be used to elicit attention. This technology worked once, and since every time it is re-run the beast is taken to “Womb” and back to where and when it was first devised... forgive them they know not what they do. Once in *Response* and out of Real Time the beast may talk, talk funny, murder, abuse, etc. to elicit “love”/ attention. Once the programme is ended, the beast emotes, *Rewarding* its “self” and returns to (present) Time/Reality to find something else to colour and redefine as *Stimulus* in order to re-return itself to “Womb,” a make believe place/ unTime.

RMAA were created by the animal to please particular attendants, elicit their attention. The suit of armoury of the RMAA is devised and based upon the Primary and Secondary, yet the armour(y) is not just those two programmes, rather as tasks need be performed, this is accomplished by first distorting or colouring Reality so that a “no” or *Stimulus* can be imagined, and then adding to this original this-or-that-variation to these two original programmes, thus the RMAA’s suit of armour becomes encumbered and unwieldy. Eventually the beast becomes so encumbered, with RMAA whose armour(y) is the sum of not merely the many lies and distortions (autonomic filters) but also the many weapons or task accomplishing programmes, that it can neither Sense Reality nor deal relevantly with It. (Reality and God are synonymous, something made inaccessible by the animal’s autonomies, bestial or Pavlovian nature).

Just as any Homo robotics leaves present Time to return to the time and unReality where that programme was originally devised and perfected, so too does a speaker. Each word learned and spoken was encouraged and rewarded whether well spoken or incorrectly delivered. Some even preserve their childhood inadequacies (speech impediments), and “*self*-Reprimand” for speaking incorrectly, so that they can feel

“loved.” This “*self-word-touch-love*” becomes a short circuit, a death loop, an addiction. One might stutter to feel “love.” Still others speak correctly for “love.”

As a speaker’s RMAA speaks “it” imagines that “it” is speaking to a familiar bairn attendant. Coupled with its having been “no” programmed, much of what it speaks and how it speaks are “no”s: Real, coerced out of its personal environment or imagined. unConsciously. “it” will have the person say horrendous things in ridiculous ways. This results in gossip, antagonisms, gossipy false witness (the 9th) and all sorts of friction and “love.” Because speech is another programme’s *Response*, its speaker leaves (present) Time before it even speaks. So the “no” proceeds to initiate speech, then as the person proceeds to speak, it does so in TRANCE. Returning to Reality only after the flash of *Reward*.

Forgive them they know not what they speak.

Here is another interesting thing about speech. As a speaker speaks it imagines that it is speaking to a familiar bairn attendant. So just as a person relives tying a shoe, pretending that it is being performed in order to please or earn the attention/“love” of a bairn attendant, the speaker speaks or hears its speech as if it was coming from a much younger person, for “it” takes the person out-of-(present) TIME to do any and all of “its” many tasks. Upon hearing its voice played back on a tape recorder often times the listener/ speaker does not recognise the mature voice that they are hearing. The RMAA’s suit of armour(y) not only distorts what “it” senses but also what its “self” sounds like.

I often have students listen and grade people upon the attitude of the RMAA that rules these at a given time. Some RMAA are passive, others are antagonistic even to the point of sounding threatening, but all are looking for” love” and often in all the wrong places.

This is instructive for they identify the emotional aspect of people’s suits of armoury at a given time. The next step is to come to sense and define their own RMAAic suits of armour(y), and each suit’s three aspects. Later on, by the time of the Coven Joust , they must learn not only how to affect different attitudes by speech and content of conversation, but also to enter in-total any and all coloration’s to such a degree that their emotional state is utter disapproval and antagonism while their words are utter agreement. The victims in the Coven Joust are identifying and anticipating negative and antagonistic exudations to continue, so the victim will be autonomically “no”-ing the Jouster(s), and will disagree with the Jouster’s statement no matter its content. Speech is a large part of this, for it isn’t what you say, but rather what tone of voice you use to say it.

Speech is so much a part of each RMAA that enter Champion best be constructed by you to have an accent other than any of your RMAA. Other characteristics of speech, posture, breathing patterns, the way you look at people, the way you hold your head, the way you walk; all must be Consciously controlled and maintained, generally a paradox to your RW(M)AA. You were first a physical being, so Physicality or your physical aspect is where you must begin in order to lay siege your Castle-unConsciousness.

The enter Champion is a Wilfully Maintained Physical Husk.

A Paradox.

Fortunately this is far simpler than you might think. These “children” of yours are very simple. Posture for instance is just an act. It may portray inadequacy, machismo, blonde stupidity or paranoia: the entire range of emotional states. To affect in enter Champion the perfect posture feels quite good after so many years affecting unConsciously other than perfect posture. The personalities need only be denied one or two major characteristics of each of “their” suits of armour for you to disIntegrate “them” at Will and then demand fealty of “each,” simplifying “each” to the point of them doing only valuable and uncomplicated physical acts of dexterity and perhaps a few mental dexterities. Speech holds so much of the Walls of the Dream Keep together. So too does cigarettes for the addicted smoker, or “*self-reprimand-word-touch-love*” for the self-pitier, or alcohol for the drunk. Denial. Absolute Will. Paradox. Game.

You can study the tones of mothers throughout the world as they talk to their bairns and discover that the tone patterns are nearly identical, despite the differences in language. So by saying one thing and sounding and affecting in attitude that is opposite, the victim can be coerced into verbally, by the content of his or her language, disagreeing with its original premise, or what it thought was its original premise. This slight of armoury further supports the idea in those not understanding what is actually taking place in the Coven Joust

that human is not motivated by what is right or wrong, but rather by “how can I get and hold a surrogate bairn attendant’s attention for an extended period of time?” True enough human is solely motivated by its RMAAic desire for “love,” but the Coven Joust is a form of Ceptel, or what you call hypnosis.

Eventually a group of students will learn to enter the entire spectrum of emotional attitudes to such a degree that they can instil calm in a crowd or instigate bloody carnage. This attitude shifting also is practised around animals (non human ones). The difference between a voider and a novice or student is simply that an accomplished voider spends most of his or her time in Reality accumulating life-Force, so that when it does choose to emote it is a strong wave that can align all those in the wave with this indulged-in emotion, whereas a student spends most of its time out-of-(present) Time trying desperately to Access the FORCE. Voiders only indulge to game or to Access more energy. Their gaming is decided by their-*self* in a state of Holy Grail. The Council (grail-less Holy’s) often ask or suggest humankind manipulations, because they have an over view. Being grail-less they can Sense over indefinite range.

This ability to have indefinite range is practised and perfected before they disincorporate. It is called disIntegration and shifting coloration. This allows void warriors to travel instantaneous through time and space, for they are One with IT, are alterable by Accepting chameleon-like a different coloration. This ability to shift begins in shifting attitudes: assumption of attitudes. What you call emotions.

There are people that want to be the victim in every situation that involves an hallucinated bairn attendant, for this was what they came to know as “love” and a familiar form of attention. These wear that hopeless and helpless expression, and are dear to all salespersons (Templars/carneys) of the world. These people will tell you how awful life and other people have treated them. This is “love” to them. They sift the literature, art, and life for victims with whom they can identify (mirror).

On the other hand some people display an attitude of showing to “Dad” or to “Mom” that they are strong and able, which can be developed to the point of being down right mean and macho. Such a person lives in a Dreamscape in which they persevere and are victorious.

No matter the attitude of a given RW(M)AA within a person, they all display the emotional attitude of their RW(M)AA’s suit of armour(y) by speech, tonality, as well as intellectual (or lack there of) content of what is spoken. Physical posturing should be the first thing denied RW(M)AA by acts of Will. This involves actual posture, where you fix your gaze (inclination of chin and eyesight), breathing patterns and control of these. Even the accent of the language used is important. Your RW(M)AA are all actors who must be denied their acting-out. So by wilfully speaking with an accent and a different tone to your voice your RW(M)AA are confused and denied their normal act. The emotional aspect of a given RW(M)AA will often shift as you change your speech, tone, accent and posture. The intellectual aspect is the most bothersome, for the Tertiary Root of evil or internal dialogue has replaced the role of the surrogate bairn attendant. This is “*self*-word-touch-love”. Your best bet is to just concentrate so much in present Time that your internal dialogue stops. As I have said before this is accomplished by intense concentration in ones physical deliberations: Awareness of every musculature. As a child you had to practise this intense Awareness of Physicality as you attempted to do any and all tasks, for your dexterity was unformulated. Once you left the more mundane tasks up to RM(W)AA, allowing these to do for you automatically, you fell Asleep. So deliberate internal quietude and intense physical Awareness is prerequisite to Awakening. All enter Champions must have these in common.

As I have suggested the answer is to construct a Lancelot or an enter Champion (females formulate a Meredith-messenger from the sea, an all knowing/ Sensitive being), which is this perfect new self that is a physical husk, an ideal self that you wilfully maintain in order to deny your Pavlovian “idiots,” one who only thinks in order to accomplish certain gamings and then stops thought as it applies the decided strategy, which are done unemotionally. The enter Champion is described as a husk because by indulging in the maintenance of this husk, RW(M)AA are denied and the spirit of your body or grail can slowly be coerced to make this wilfully devised and maintained husk as its physical body. Removing for ever and for ever the grail (true self) from the confines of the dungeon of the Castle-unConsciousness, which once again will enable the union of Holy Grail that you Real-ised as a child, a Real and Sensitive child.

By affecting an Accepting tone of voice one will be Accepting. You are what you affect. So many times I am told by students that they don't feel that such affectations are natural. My retort is simple, "Do you want to be a Natural beast or a Conscious being?" Many individuals' RW(M)AA talk harshly or as if they were little children: both are RW(M)AAic affectations, both are acts, both are done unConsciously. By controlling speech, tone, dialect, emotional bent, content of what one says and how it is said, one practises Will. Conscious deliberation of a physical, mental (rather than dreamy intellectual) and Spiritual (lack of exuding life-Force by emoting) characteristic must Be. Every communication must be handled the same way you would handle crossing a dilapidated rope bridge that spanned a gorge that is three hundred meters deep. Not in fear, but rather with Awareness, intense Awareness. The same sort of intense Awareness that you practised as a child when you tried to stand or as you practised walking for the first time in your new life. Children suck in Reality, whereas grown-ups throw away their life-Force readily as a result of their bestiality.

Counter or Identical

Students often make the observation that their specific RW(M)AA have them do things in the same way as their bairn attendants or the exact opposite. Such patterns of actions, facial expressions, values, etc. make up the armoury as well as the armour of their RW(M)AA.

This I explain simply as a matter of which Root of evil programming is at work. If the RW(M)AA is re-running a Primary Root of evil in order to elicit attention, then the beast may do the controversial or a “no” to access “love.” If, however, the RW(M)AA has sophisticated and self-perplexed the carrying-out of a specific programme by first entering a TRANCE initiated by the Tertiary Root of evil, then that RW(M)AA is already giving “its” “self” “*self-word-touch-love*” or “*self-reprimand-word-touch-love*” and then “it” responds by doing the task to please “its” imagined (or recalled) bairn attendant, correctly, for “it” has already “loved” “itself” autonomically.

Let’s say that a RW(M)AA sees a ball, and that there is a person to throw it towards. This RW(M)AA may be equipped with a programme that returns the ball to the person, pretending that it is a bairn attendant and so knows that in one case scenario that if it throws it just out of that person’s reach, that this will elicit a response of “reprimand-word-touch-love.” In another scenario that RW(M)AA goes through a large number of switches or “*self-word-touch-love*” and “*self-reprimand-word-touch-love*” and then delivers the ball on target (giving that “self” of the moment the “*self-word-touch-love*” of, “good job”). Both are programmes of “love.” Both are used to elicit “love,” yet one manifests an opposite result than the other. This is what discipline can produce. Discipline without Acceptance. Certainly the original “love” or “no” *Stimulus* of a programme does work to re-run programmes, so the beast can be fed “its” quota of “love.” The RW(M)AA can be fed by “self-love” or by “reprimand” elicited from imagined or concerted bairn attendants or from *self*. In both cases the RW(M)AA flashes *Reward*. Yet the outward manifestations can be complete opposites. At two points in that person’s programming it learned both scenarios. The choice of which one will be run, is entirely up to the beast’ “self.” By being in an attitude of Acceptance via Champion your “self” will more readily re-run a more simplistic and positive programme. This programme, if you can enter a Realness, the Realness of your youth when you did not play mind games, you did not use “no” to throw the ball, a time when you were by yourself and you were concentrating on developing the dexterity that was required to throw the ball, can be re-run. To do this you must enter Awareness. And that is where enter Champion lands you. Reality. Then you think about doing the task in this state and it is accomplished correctly and Wilfully.

To accomplish this you must quiet down, Sense your body as it moves, as it grasps the ball, and be completely Aware of the entire activity at hand. A student related to me a TV show where the activity, that a priest does to protect himself during combat, is run in slow motion, yet often the action is so rapid in Real time that he catches a knife in mid air as it is being propelled towards its destination.

This is possible with every activity that you do. Being always Conscious of every activity that you do, as you do it, is significant. Speech is yet another programme that you must perform Consciously. In this Real Time Mode you are Aware of your self, your True-self. This is called in other vernaculars, self love, or appreciation. In this Mode, you are Sensual and Real, you are again an Absorber and Accessor of life-Force, as you were in your childhood. I have told you that there is a correct way to do all and every activity that you do.

I always find it hilarious that you so readily throw something as precious as life-Force away. I Absorb when you flash evil after you have *Responded*, into “Womb,” by first having coloured a “no.” I Accept FORCE that you animals exude as you go about doing day to day chores or tasks, for all are done Asleepily. All of the tasks you set out to do are done autonomically. All of these chores are done by re-running “no”/ “love” programmes. This need not be the case, however it is in fact so. You too can learn to Absorb, rather than emote. Speech when made aware of and controlled can be a major tool in denying your RW(M)AA “their” expression.

And participatory activity of the re-running of any and all of a RW(M)AA's "love" programmes is "self" love and simplifying. Whether you decide to do something the same as you would normally do, or counter to this, then becomes your Conscious choice.

Have you ever watched a tennis match where one competitor loses because of his inability to remain in Time/ Awareness, allowing his or her ruling "self" to lose the match for "love," specifically "*self*-reprimand-word-touch-love"?

CHAPTER 19
Sin or Self Abuse

Who is at fault, who is the sinner, who is doing the bad thing to whom?

There are those, many, who just want to be “loved” by recalled bairn attendants. The study of rats raised in a high density environment produced two types: passive and dominant. There are those children of human that are passives. These learned, that to get a particular bairn attendant’s attention, they had to perfect a number of programmes that displayed helplessness and ineptitude to elicit attention. Despite the fact that the form of attention may elicit the extreme form of attention that involves abuse, a spanking or some sort of derision; still the programmed beast will continue to utilise the same armoury to elicit attention, no matter in what form it may come. When defines are sensed and coloured into symbols, they can become *Stimulus* for that specific RW(M)AA to initiate what “it” believes is a relevant *Response*. When a person is ruled by such a RW(M)AA, who wants to be “loved” in this specific way, then that is what “it” has that person seek. So who is doing the sinning to whom? The person being taken or the person doing the taking? Who is being who, what and when? Confused?

It is even far simpler than all of this, Really. Coloration. As you live life you are supposed to be accumulating sufficient life-Force to Ascend. Homo robotics does collect life-Force. The coloration of this life-Force is tainted. It is negative, for it was collected in a state of fear and loathing in Las Vegas, which results in the beast re-incarnating rather than Ascending. It is a conditioned beast, blowing more life-Force than it can Access, which results in premature death.

Once the *Stimulus* is imagined, coerced or found then *Response* takes the beast into its autonomies, which is a TRANCE state that I call in this book “Womb” or in the old vernacular, Dream Keep. Then *Reward* is flashed, which is the exudation or throwing away of life-Force, usually after it has been coloured into a negative form. A return to Reality does not take place until after this flashing, at which time the RW(M)AA again sifts Reality for defines that can easily be distorted into symbols which act as *Stimulus* for another “love” programme. These symbols usually are coloured “no” or negative, for that is what elicited “touch-love” in the Primary Root of evil. Most subsequent programmes are variations on either the Primary or Secondary Roots of evil. This process is continuous and only lets up Naturally during Shock periods supplied by sickness, trauma, drugs, bio-chemical anomalies and deep bedtime sleep in Homo robotics. These interludes are periods of Absorption of life-Force. This process of direct Absorption is a sort of safety override. This process of autonomic emoting can be stopped in one other way, though. This way is by the use of acts of Will. Step by controlled step in Awareness and concentration. Realness. This is the safest way to proceed and is fail-safe and stable.

People who were forced, taught, devised this system of being inadequate and being self-pitying will continue this “love” no matter what anyone else does for or to this dumb animal. If the people around an animal, that has thus been programmed, refuses to crucify, refuses to demoralise, refuses to disparage, refuses to belittle, refuses to deprecate, refuses to denigrate, refuses to ridicule her/ him, then the beast will feel so utterly un-“loved” that it will go forth in search of someone to “love” “it.”

There was this couple who were newly wed. He loved her dearly and was not programmed to belittle anyone. She could not get him to “love” her so eventually, after the novelty of sexual sharing and mutual satisfaction grew thin, that by the way was eventually coloured to be degrading by her, her DRWAA felt un-“loved.” Something was missing in her life. She could not put her finger on it, she could not define just what was missing. She identified with martyrs so she began working at a soup kitchen, and eventually left her husband to help the needy in India.

She would often encourage car dealers, repairmen, plumbers, salespersons, anyone and every one to take advantage of her so she could feel “lovingly” inadequate. She always thought about herself and others as victims of something, and so her posture, demeanour, behaviour, and bearing, as well as her facial expression reflected this attitude. These one’s: any and every, became in the mind’s eye or through the visor of that specific RWAA’s helmet that ruled her for that moment, hallucinated into roles of a familiar bairnhood attendant.

Is the plumber a sinner for overcharging? Is she a sinner because she allowed someone to take advantage of her? Is she a sinner for leaving a truly loving and accepting husband, because he refuses to “love” her in the fashion that she received throughout her childhood? He was left miserable when she left him. She did so

because of her bestiality, which she could not stop and did not know existed, yet it was ruining her life and that of her husband, whom was devoted to her.

You are each here to Absorb sufficient life-Force so that you can Ascend. Absorption or Accessing is accomplished in an Attitude of Acceptance not prostration. The plumber is practising Accessing when she charges a person wages for working her physical magic. The beast that is re-running a programme unConsciously, a programme that ends in emoting is a dumb animal; no different than a dog raising its leg to urinate on an electric fence. Perhaps an inflated bill from the plumber will shock the animal the way that electric fence will shock the dog.

The point of being here is to Access life-Force in order to Ascend. Anyone that is pretending to be a victim unConsciously does so by autonomically disallowing Reality to be Accessed. The plumber may be more Real and Sensual than the “victim,” if the plumber, in order to accomplish the act of plumbing effectively, had to work more immersed in (present) Time.

If a dumb animal allows itself to be a victim, so be it.

Christ’s Onward Christian Martyrs fell prey to paradox. Christ’s students have so perfected the Tertiary Root of evil that they “turn the other cheek, and take it up the butt hole.” Each of the schools of Christianity have been growing more and more unbalanced and unReal. Each of these were attempts at balancing the unRealness that existed in the world at the time of these school’s creation. Christians have developed ineffectual and grossly unbalanced societies that lack the basic lesson of Cause, Effect and Access, for Christians “love” everything they do or have done to them; they are martyr’s. They have given new meaning to the idea of Acceptance and the phrase, “spread the cheeks,” oops, that’s “turn the other cheek.” Roman society lacked Patience and Understanding, while being big on Discipline. The Christian Era reacted to this by doing the opposite.

Note: my reference to spreading cheeks is not literal and I am not saying anything against homosexuals, for they must learn their lessons and Eorthe must survive the plague that is procreative man. There is one other thing. If your Will increases in a given lifetime, yet you still wish to return via reincarnation to schoolhouse Eorthe Plane, then that huge amount of Will/ Consciousness enables you to choose (more) Consciously the body that you enter. You may choose homosexual, heterosexual, by-sexual, or asexual, race, religion, poverty, propertied grail. With Will comes choice.

Was Christ or subsequent teachers of Christianity sinners for misinforming its members? Is the local Priest a sinner for trying to teach everyone in his or her congregation harmonious coexistence to the extremes of inducing the judicial system, the education system and the institutions of government as well as most companies to neglect Discipline by over-indulging in Understanding and Patience?

Your Ascension is the only reason to be here. You are not here just for a shoe shine or a clean windshield or a good gasoline¹². It would help and increase the Ascension of Earth members if laws were codified, justice was blind (and perhaps even computerised). Learning the Ability to Respond applicably or working Magic coupled with Absorbing or Accepting the FORCE Accessed is all there is to life. Sensuality. Accepting Rather than emoting.

You colour your grail by what you think, pretend, do, imagine, and how you interact, practise selective sensory deprivation and hallucination. Weaving a Dream Keep wherein you are always a victim or pretend to be the ‘Great, I am’ is Keeping Reality at bay, Keeping the FORCE inAcceptable and inAccessible. Sin and coloration is entirely up to the individual. Almost no one does anything to you. In most cases you allow them to abuse or use you. Sin and coloration is done by the individual to its own grail. It is your RW(M)AA that are the enemy and your slavers. Attitude is everything. “they” colour and imprison you and cause you to sin and do harm to others, as well as put yourself in harms way. This brings to mind the woman that remains married to a man that beats her every night for twenty years of their “loving” marriage. She remains in “love.”

The Nazi’s of Germany as individuals were stupid and short sighted beasts. Liken them to your “selves.” “their” actions or lack there of are a result of your own weakness, just as the sin of Germans was that they

¹² Mothers of Invention by Frank Zappa (music album)

allowed the Nazi's to come to power and allowed them to do things that everyone knew to be wrong. Chamberlain, the French and the German citizens, as well as the Americans too, should have stepped in way before they did. In truth they all should have been militarily against fascism in Spain. In the same way murderers must die in the same way that they murdered, and spousal abusers must be beaten and abused in the exact same way that it is documented that they have abused. Otherwise they must return in a subsequent lifetime to experience this, which is a waste of a good vehicle (human body).

One would think that anyone that endured the torment and torture in the Nazi concentration camp would certainly be allowed to enter heaven. There are Nazi war criminals who actually Ascended sooner than many of their victims. This is not a matter of their deeds, but rather it is a matter of the acquisition of Will and their Assuming certain coloration's and Accepting what they did. Your coloration and Acceptance (the ability to collect life-Force) is everything. Don't imagine that there is someone tallying up your karmic score. You each do that, yourselves. It is called the acquisition of coloration, something you do as you live your life.

Understand that if you come to "love" emoting to the point of terror in one lifetime, this colour's your holy and decides your affinity to a grail in your next lifetime that will be so coloured or subsequently coloured by an accumulation of certain life experiences. Suicide, for instance, changes nothing. Unless it is an act of Will that you must learn. For the most part you merely start up where you left off. There are Nazi concentration camp members that find themselves (reincarnated) in bodies that are back in the same coloration because as inmates they had come to "love" this their painful disposition.

CHAPTER 20
Discoveries

As you deny your RW(M)AA, you will begin to have insights. By not allowing your RW(M)AA to do what “they” normally do and how “they” normally do a task as elementary as breathing, standing or walking, you will be simplifying that particular RW(M)AA’s armour(y). This accomplishes the removal of some or all of “its” armour. This enables your Sensuality. Formalised Jousting has the same effect that any Act of Will has on the RW(M)AA (for it is an act of Will). Acts of Will, life threatening occurrences, bio-chemical imbalances, illness, drug induced anomalies may create large gaping holes in the outer plates of armour of the robotic-men-at-arm’s suits of armour and rend gaping holes in the Walls of the Castle-unConsciousness. According to how long you remain out of TRANCE and more Real has every thing to do with the incidence of discovery or what many call insight. Otherwise armour can come to be huge and encumbering. Every mistake or traumatic response to mistakes, every emotional response from personal environment adds to the armour. If these slights were Accepted and experiences had been free-associated in childhood as soon as they took place, then they would not have become encumbrances, adding to the armour of your “selves.” The insights can be definitive and quite spectacular, such things as hallucinations and spatial and temporal disIntegration, but fortunately most are small little instances that are felt as slight shifts in attention, much like having a memory that disorients your attention, quite often distorting your eyesight momentarily. Most are very sublime: fleeting moments that result in lightness, for plates of armour have been removed, indefinitely.

When you first begin to Wilfully impose your rule and begin to become Aware of every movement accomplished by your “self” of the moment, that RW(M)AA will be loved (and simplified), for you will be using it to Sense Reality and will be paying strict attention to “its” every activity. Neglect “it” and “it” will try more sophisticated (negative) programmes from “its” armoury of attention eliciting weaponry.

After these periods of Reality-Accessing the Awareness of your RW(M)AA, your attention, may falter and a newer and more numbing plate of armour and its armoury will be called upon to get your attention. These may be negative, but they are always more complex and so encumbering and deSensitising. When I say newer I am referring to the fact that the more complex programmes are devised as of late. For instance standing and walking are among the first programmes learned by a RW(M)AA. Subsequent armoury for the elicitation of attention is devised much later.

By paying close attention to every movement that your RW(M)AA is making, what is called Physicality, your “self” is simplified. As you then become lazy, numb and disinterested in the activity of your RW(M)AA more complex and newer programmes are tried/ re-run by that RW(M)AA that have proven most effective. If you catch your “self” as “it” starts to do one of these less desirable programmes and remain on the edge of Asleepness-Consciousness (one leg in the armour(y) of one of your RW(M)AA and the other leg in enter Champion), then you will have Realisations. This is called disIntegration. (recall that your idiots are integrated, only one rules you at a given time) You will Sense why and how this particular programme was devised and all the unnecessary neuro-pathways will be eliminated from that programme. Often times the entire extraneous part of the programme dissolves as disIntegration occurs.

Initially you will want to re-establish enter Champion or what can be called re-Accessing Reality by practising the Cause and Effect of Formalised Jousting. Usually students will Joust for two to three hours and then, upon stopping after completing the session will find that one of their “selves” has taken over their body in a matter of minutes and again must Joust in order to re-establish their Access to Reality. As a student lapses into Asleepness they will Sense this, particularly if they have been told where they are and have already practised and devised their unique enter Champion. By being aware of where Acts of Will lands them, they can easily understand what and when one of their RW(M)AA are re-building “its” (the RW(M)AA of that moment) Castle-unConsciousness. By assuming enter Champion and wilfully extending his or her stay in Reality, the attempts of RW(M)AA to conjure “their” Dream Keep will be apparent and controlled. “their” minor magicks of Cause, Effect and Access, instead of being in ‘echo off mode’ or sublime, will become apparent. This is where and when insights occur and programmes lose their convoluted and wasteful pathways. Often thousands of switches in the brain are eliminated as well as the responses the body performed as these were energised. Facial expressions, postures, antagonistic phrases, obnoxious statements, dangerous acts, maiming’s, hurtful words, hateful ones no longer plague the individual.

CHAPTER 21
When Ever

“I Really have trouble with being Real. Yes, of course I know that I must stop taking sugar and that smoking cigarettes plugs me up and makes me inSensitive, as does alcohol and the wrong foods, but I have discovered this loop.”

“I have no trouble with sugar. I have no trouble with foods. This is the problem I have. I am a good hermit. When I get close to people I fall Asleep. If they are smoking cigarettes I want to go behind the shed with them, symbolically, and have one. Alone, I have no desire whatsoever to smoke or drink alcohol, but around others, well, I just want to belong to their insanity. What should I do?”

The answer is simple. You must learn to be Real around people. I suggest that you aren't doing enough jousting. This means that you not only joust more days a week but that you must also do it the moment you feel yourself falling Asleep during the day. You will need to do this intense jousting for only a few days or weeks, just long enough to remain in Awareness particularly when interacting with people. The more times you bring yourself back to Reality, the more you will have insights into the Asleepness of the “it” of that moment. This will re-programme that RW(M)AA. Any time you find that you are doing a thing un-economically or indulging a RW(M)AA and allowing “it” to do something that is impractical, again you will have to return to jousting. You must stop being a hermit. One of your RW(M)AA is apparently indulging in paranoia. You must go to people and every contact must be a joust. You must, as must all students eventually, bridge Formal Jousting and disIntegration with enter Champion. If you fear flying, then fly in an Aware way. If you fear bugs, experience them in a Real way. If you readily mirror the bestiality of others, indulge in their company. Observe them and remain as an observer coaxing them to do their bestial programming as a game and watch them like puppets on a string as your symbology animates them and induces emoting.

The result accomplished by Formal Jousting and all forms of paradox must not be ignored or released once these forms of Will have been performed. They place you in Reality. You must extend this period of Access indefinitely. This non-Attitude, “self”-lessness or simplicity of “self” must be recalled, and you must learn to re-disIntegrate at Will. So many words. I just wrote that you must Will your Will. If this crap gets through to you then who cares how many words it takes.

Be aware of the trap of “no”-ing your RW(M)AA: when *self* reprimands “self.” This can loop out of control.

Hilariously, students imagine that it is I who is doing something to them; that they cannot Realise Access to Reality unless I or some surrogate bairn attendant is involved with the endeavour. It is they who must have these insights. It is they who, by doing more and more Wilful acts such as jousting and day to day acts of Will, must balance their “selves,” removing vast plates of each RW(M)AA's suit of armour(y). Anyone that does these jousts, anyone that practises Will over her or his RW(M)AA eventually begin having insights, destroying loops or short circuits. You are your own source. It is you who must Ascend. As Jimi Hendrix sang in the tune ¹³If Six Were Nine, “I'm the one that's got to die when it's time for me to die, so let me live my life the way I want to.” As long as your RW(M)AA are living your life for you, then you are slaves to your past, to some bairn attendants that no longer exist. Oh, your parents or those who raised you may still be alive, but your RW(M)AA don't have anything to do with them. Your robotic-men-at-arms travel into “Womb,” out-of-present Time (a fictitious place). Here “they” do the will of “their” bairn attendants. Recall that “they” do the will of imagined and recalled phantoms.

This is why you must spend more time interacting with people in Reality. You can't know how to stop “them” if you never practise formally, control over “them.” Being a hermit doesn't cut it, for the moment a hermit has to socially interact with people, its RW(M)AA, who are lonely and undisciplined (unknown the entire time of the hermitage) jump out to be “loved,” acting in the way most effective at eliciting attention.

¹³If Six Were Nine by Jimi Hendrix, from the album Axis Bold As Love ©1967, Yaneta Co. Ltd., Nassau Bahamas, c/o Clark Enterprises, Inc.

“love” Quotas

She tried to stop “no”-ing. In every way that she stopped, still her RW(M)AA continued to get “their” “love.” As she would stop “no”-ing other people and things, she would “no” her “selves.” “they” had her enslaved “no”-ing “them.” For a period she tried to keep her internal dialogue stopped, which resulted in her talking to herself in public without Realising it. With every attempted control over or suppression of internal dialogue or “no”-ing; other less used “no”-ings replaced those wilfully denied.

Then when she imagined that she had control, the Secondary Root would kick in and Really hurt her. She was jogging and swimming as an act of Will. A robotic-woman-at-arms would have her sleep wrong and walk wrong for “love.” Her pains fed her RWAA, for she would “worry” and fret over her maladies. And as this “love” was perfected the maladies got worse.

She decided that she would not judge anyone. So next thing she knows she has entered TRANCE and ruined an expensive piece of machinery. Yes, a mother figure gave her lots of “reprimand-word-touch-love,” and fired her. She would stop “no”-ing others and found one of her “selves” being, what is called, artfully sarcastic. As if being sarcastic is all right. Humorous perversion or perverted humour? Of course in any culture made up of “no” programmed Pavlovian Perverts sarcasm is an acceptable form of humour.

She had a boyfriend for some time and she decided not to “no” him.

Without the “no”-ing he felt un-“loved.”

No matter how hard she tried, she could not stop the “no”-ing. She could not stop trying to elicit attention by use of the “no.” When she tried to not be sarcastic she would conjure and imagine all sorts of “no”s, which was in the form of Grande Opinion. She found her “self” watching the news in order to have some one or something to “no,” for she had stopped “no”-ing those around her to a great degree. She’d wear a scowl unConsciously. Her face became a mass of wrinkles.

Her denial of “no”-ing merely forced the RW(M)AA to shift “their” tactics. “they” perused the plates of their armour and “their” arsenal and found programmes to enable “themselves” the period of Asleepness that “they” had grown accustomed to over the course of her life.

As the Primary and Secondary are denied, the Tertiary Root of evil becomes the main form of pre-occupation, Asleepness inducement. This is called nay-saying ones “selves.” While it is “love” for ones RW(M)AA, it is fatal, imprisoning. As you try to stop this, your RW(M)AA will become so sublime that “they” will start a campaign of antagonism of others (Quaternary Root). Without you even Realising it, you are in a fight or disagreement with someone. This can take the form of speeding in ones car hoping that a police person will “love” “it,” doing something wrong at work or any number of situational comedies. The deadliest form of “love” is the indulgence in the Secondary Root of evil and when it is denied as much as it can be by Wilfulness; the RW(M)AA work sublimely and produce Chronic conditions and cancers in “its” body (The Cinquenary Root of evil). Those virus’ that you contract should last no more than 48 to 72 hours, yet the personality expert in the Cinquenary may work “its” magicks to continue these ailments for weeks and even months. Even the simple cold lingers far longer in Homo robotics than it does in Sapiens. “If I stay sick, I will be “word-touch-loved” by SELF, who says, “you poor thing.” Self-pity or rather SELF pitying “self,” who is lonely and wants to stay on this “love” programme of “being ill” for as long as possible. During childhood your RW(M)AA spent a certain amount of time re-running or playing at being sick. These games can become the major configuration of ones Castle unConsciousness. Chronic pains, chronic headaches, chronic allergies are part of the Cinquenary Root of evil, which can be fatal and for most Homo robotics these “love” programmes are indulged to their demise.

Note: “love” programmes or psychological attitudes produce certain bio-chemicals in the body. Your science has got so precise that you try to alter the attitude of the “nuts” by neutralising the chemicals being produced or adding chemicals of which the “nut’s” psychological attitude has stopped the production. Drugs and micromanaging the chemical make-up of the brain and body is keeping the creature from its lessons.

These quotas can only be denied by the growth of Will. This cannot be an hour a day, quitting smoking tobacco, starting to jog one mile a day, or deciding not to “no” others. The growth of Will comes from a siege, an unwavering and intense onslaught. You must stop day-dreaming as well as fantasising. Yawning and stretching throughout the day must be stopped. Jousting helps a great deal. Correct diet can not only aid in the elimination of excessive internal dialogue (extraneous mental processes), but also allow the individual to become more Sensitive, for poor diet contributes to clogging by the build-up of mucous. Ultimately what must happen is that the RW(M)AA must be simplified/ regressed and become Aware of, so that “each” can be and feel loved. This starts out as appreciative love of the ruling or at least operating “self” of the moment, and hopefully becomes love of self. The difference is a matter of Reality. The “self” or RW(M)AA of the moment must be given attention and steered to beingness. You must be Aware, as the RW(M)AA that does something as simple as walking. Do so, for if you do not, more sophisticated programmes will be tried that require that you become even more Asleep, inSensitive and numb. Most of these more sophisticated eliciments of attention use negativity as the weapon to access “love.” Don’t imagine that you are getting less done because you are simplifying and loving your “self,” which unifies the “self” of the moment with your (true) self or grail, for Understand that if you do not simplify and appreciate this RW(M)AA into Grail, that the RW(M)AA, if “it” is allowed to remain in power will re-run “no” programmes, which makes your life miserable and is in fact fatal. Once your RW(M)AA have your love and hold your appreciation and Awareness as you have “each” do simple, mostly physical things, “they” will come to love your attention and Awareness of “each.” Doing the simplest task will be done by a “self” reduced to Grail (true-self). At this point every task will be done in a Real way by a Real being. Sensual. The *self* and (true) self become one in the same, while the “self” performs for the union of these two, called Grail.

Whatever you became accustomed to as a foetus, this flashing of emotion and the time spent in negative coloration is matched, sets the Dream quota. The more reasons you are given to leave Reality while in the womb, the more this increases your quota. Another thing that can increase the times enTRANCEment takes place is how often your host had been practising dreaming (practising internal dialogue and intellectualism-every free period?). The more time you were compelled to spend “safe within your Womb” the more comfortable you became there. Another factor is the insanity of your host. If your host spent most of her time in a state of apprehension you too will try to relive this familiar state for the duration that your host had done so. To the foetus such periods of increased heart rates, periods of quiet harmony, periods of all and every emotional state is mirrored after birth. If the host spent twelve minutes of a twenty four hour day in a state of harmony, then too does the bairn tend to do so. If the majority of the host’s time was spent in fear and loathing or stress, so too does the bairn attempt to re-live and recreate a “Womb”-world of just such a description. However, once you acquire Will over your bestiality, you will no longer care to spend time and energy recreating a familiar “Womb” and emoting. This “no”-ing, this Quota thing can become a prison particularly for counters. Modern witch doctors call these obsessive. Still the strategy is the same: remember what you are about. Remain in Reality and Do. Paradox stops the counter.

Sound Familiar?

There takes a shift in “no”-ing when a person becomes a mother or father, which ever the case may be. The person’s RW(M)AA begins to develop a new “love” exchange or an old “love” programme is pulled out of the mothballs. If she or he had taken care of a younger sibling, then that programme may exist, but is rarely used, except with close friends. If not then the programme is developed. The development is a matter of incessant attention or “love” elicitation by offspring.

As mother or father Homo robotics begins to be drawn into the “love” programming of its child or children, each, at any given moment is ruled by a personality or “self” that conjures and maintains the Walls of its Asleepness by “no”-ing anything that happens by. The needs of its “selves” and the needs of the “selves of its children adds up to pure and incessant “love.” Parents in TRANCE or while trying to incessantly initiate “love” programming in order to re-return them selves to “Womb” and emote soon find their entire lives and every moment of the day “no”-ing their children incessantly. Ain’t “love” grand?

After years and years of having children to “no,” these parents are at a loss when their steady supply of *Stimuli* for “love” programmes are less and less available. The loneliness of parents/ the loneliness of their ruling RWAA or RMAA, inclines them to become Real pain in the necks to their children. Frantically these “love”-ers, after building up a huge daily quota of “no”-ing in regard to their parents, all of a sudden find their “self” with no one to “no”/ “love.” Tantrums. These animals are ruled by children, for that is what “selves” are after all. And if they don’t get their ‘normal’ amount of interaction or “love” they will become... irrational, blatantly irrational. Children when they go out on their own often find this the case with their parents. Sound familiar?

Note: Thwart by Will “love” Quotas and you will have less life-Force lost.

CHAPTER 22
Shifting

Shifting your Awareness to Reality is the final knowledge. The holy, that initially chose your body at first breath, and the Grail re-unite Consciously. In regards to The Law of ONE this enables you to Absorb sufficient Force to Ascend. In regards to working Eorthe magic or Templar endeavours, The Law of Octaves, shifting enables instantaneous manoeuvres in space, because time is dissolved.

Presently your Awareness is autonomically limited by the RW(M)AA that knows how to read. In order to read this book “it” re-runs a particular programme. This may be long and convoluted or economically short and concise. This is determined by both the programmers: the bairn attendant as well as the individual. It is possible that once you were an awful reader, but with Will you re-programmed your reading programme. Will is the One Law. Throughout your entire life, up to this point, you have been enTRANCED. The foods you eat have helped to numb you, but the entire point of your RW(M)AA are to allow them “selves” to “feel” safe in a recalled place: “Womb,” which is actually a make-believe place. This is the Castle-unConsciousness, both a protection and a prison. Your RW(M)AA guard “their” Dream Keep. Your grail is separated from your holy by “their” activity: the Holy that attached itself to your body at first breath was thus driven out and remains barred whenever these RW(M)AA are animating your body, imprisoning your (true-self) grail. Before this first breath you were no more Wilful than a deer or mouse (some religions call this karmic level or maturity). We call this simply Will, for it is the One Law. The amount of Will that holy has collected via a number of animal hosts, decides the grail it will combine with in its next endeavour to Absorb more life-Force, experience, and incidentally coloration.

The RW(M)AA send the attached holy packing as
“they” become more expert in numbing, conjuring and
controlling
your body, throwing the grail (true-self) deep into the dungeon of “their”
Dream Keep.

When you are robotic your Awareness is shrunk and autonomically limited, so as to allow your RW(M)AA of the moment to “feel” safe within “its” familiar Dream Keep/ “Womb.”

As a child you Absorbed everything upon which you focused your attention. You must regain this Awareness. FORCE surrounds and bathes you, yet you can hardly Sense/ Absorb IT in your present state of unAwareness.

enter Champion is the technology, the Meredith or Lancelot, that will free the true-self from the Dream Keep’s gaol, for maintaining it requires Will. Among Ladies there is a legend used as analogy that speaks of the deeds of a Lady that coerced by Ceptel, paradox and enTRANCEment and freed her friends from a Keep. Both methods are necessary. Both what a Lancelot uses as well as what a Meredith uses. The enter Champion is the key. Both Meredith and Lancelot were foreign. Your enter Champion must be foreign, unique in comparison to your gaolers. Dynamic.

You can help no one until you help yourself. All the nice deeds and pleasant thoughts aren’t going to do anything in which God is interested, if you use these as distractions and excuses for not acquiring sufficient Will for Ascension. Many have conjured a god that is emotional and Daddy-like. GOD/ FORCE is pure WILL. To be one with GOD you must become WILL. If you want to help another or become a healer or indulge in any such planetary uplifting you will be far more effective if and when you acquire the ability to Access FORCE. Once you re-establish Holy Grail you will know just what you should be doing with your life. Also you will KNOW how to help others and when to leave them to their own lessons (vices and devices).

Since the creation of your robotic-men-at-arms you have had your Awareness divided among these players (actors or actresses). “they” rule you, “they” shift your attention from one imagined bairn attendant to trying to please another of your recalled bairn attendants. By doing so, “they” devour your Awareness rather than Absorb, which is what you are supposed to be doing, ABSORBING. Your RW(M)AA have divvied up your Awareness and “they” have you emote, emote and emote until you are dead. You die incomplete and some are at a deficit compared to the state at which they entered this present lifetime. It happens all the time unfortunately for GOD, the expanding universes.

It is our hope that this book contains enough information and advice to enable you to learn to shift “their” use of your Awareness and place it in the hands of your grail, thus making your grail Holy again. I have your language and mis-concepts to use in order to communicate. Your concept of GOD is so paternal, so personified. GOD is not human. Earlier gods, such as the Greek gods, were and that was necessary at that time. (If you were a four foot man armed with a feeble bronze dagger and a six foot plus tall man armed with a long sword made of steel lopped off three heads at a stroke, wouldn’t you have called them gods?) Perhaps the thing to do is to divide GOD from the FORCE and let you see your god as a human and adviser for “good.” Unfortunately GOD is not good or bad, rather IT is ALL, is Complete and is not a person and has no emotions, has no good and no evil. These are man-thing’s concepts. Once you leave emotions and bestiality behind you, you will become clearer on this concept.

Shifting cannot be done until you can, at Will, be Real for more than a brief second. By coming into present Time you make your *self* Accessible, but you must Accept/ Absorb. You must become intimate with your various robotic-women or men-at-arms. The ability to shift comes with disIntegration. At first you will sense the activities of a specific “self.” Eventually knowledge of your “selves” will make you, your *self* “their” ruler/ surrogate bairn attendant. You will slow them down and simplify “each” and be fully Aware of “each” as it re-runs its specific programme. You will rarely allow the outer plates of “their” suits of armour(y) to be indulged in by your R(W)MAA, for these are usually very negative. Your intimacy/ Real love for “each self” as “it” performs will enable you to shift at Will; assuming whichever “self” you Will and whichever plate of armour and whichever arms you choose that “it” indulges in to do whatever task you wish “it”/ your grail to perform. Generally your body’s autonomies will continue as it has, but you will always remain Real/ in Time to witness all activities, loving the performer of the activity. You will both be Holy Grail Absorbing Reality/ IT and being Aware of RW(M)AAic activity.

Emoting you will never do, for you must horde life-Force in order to work magic. In order to work magic you will become Aware of flows of force. As you learn to become Real, you will Sense Force and the flows of discernible coloration’s of Force. This is part of becoming Real and re-establishing Holy Grail. As you lay siege your Dream Keep all this you will Real-ise. You need no one show you any secret pathway or incantation, but for 12 million dollars I am sure someone will claim to offer these.

Oh, yes, I would like to suggest that there are systems and schools that can be helpful in your development of Will. Military institutions are helpful. Environments wherein you have no money and only slave drivers to work you can be instructive. Also for people with lots of money and little Will (lots of excuses) I believe there are plenty of schools that might be helpful. Heck, losing your money might be just what you need anyway to force you to come to Time/ Reality.

As you begin to Sense flows every time you falter in Will (fall back Asleep) and once again discover that a “self” rules you, you will Sense a shifting. Eventually you will do a task by Wilfully shifting or indulging in a specific coloration/ stance/ attitude that the specific “self” assumes: its specific armour, and you will also begin to do or make use of a specific weaponry out of “their” armoury. Generally, your “selves” sitting on the Parapet of the Castle-unConsciousness peruse (in a stance or coloration of apprehension (carpal tunnel syndrome, chronic muscular ailments, allergies, chronic headaches, etceteras) for defines that one of them can hallucinate into a symbol as *Stimulus* and thus initiate a “love” programme from the armoury after “it” has donned a specific armour and specific plates of that armour (assumed a specific emotional, intellectual and robotic stance). Your shifting by-passes normal Pavlovian (bestial) manoeuvrings and calls on the “one” you demand that is equipped with the relevant accoutrements: shifted to the specific time and place of the creation of your specific programme/ suited (wo)man-at-arms wielding a specific weapon or pre-rehearsed and pre-devised action (programme). This shifting directly is more dynamic and more economical and such control eliminates emoting altogether. This is because, by this time in your development, Holy Grail exists and the holy is concerned with Absorption and rules the grail/ is one with the grail. This is called Gaming.

Initially you will, Will a shift. It is more like indulging in a different coloration or vibration. The programme “stance” will be indulged in and you will allow/ witness performance, then because of your Willing

and Witnessing the “self,” “it” is bathed in love and needs not emote, for “it” is you, Realising Holy Grail. This all sounds very complicated, but it becomes part of your growth and it is readily effected.

There are subjects: healing people and inducing individuals or entire crowds to act in certain ways. I won't bother here. Sufficed to say that these possibilities are readily understood as your growth in Will increases. At this point this is merely more nebulous nonsense and hearsay.

While I am giving you this line of crap I may as well leave a little more information for those of you that get this far. Shifting is a matter of the assumption of particular coloration or vibrational stance (some people Sense colours while others Sense vibrations). Eventually you may find yourself back in a past by indulging or becoming a particular vibration. As you become Holy Grail your holy's memory will be available. Indulge in one of these and you will find that you have shifted. Don't indulge in fear, for you need to Accept all the life-Force you can. Look around. Read a newspaper. See the date. Then recall your Time coloration and return to your Time/ Space. I get around more easily by leaving my blood on an area near, but never on a ley line. A natural object such as a tree or sculpture of wood is nice or a pure element. I have seen very elaborate portals. But I am a simple being. My blood is enough. The pentacle is the symbol of Eorthe. It has the five points symbolising Sensual man.

A stance or state of being when assumed involves the five senses and more. In order to learn shifting from one state to another you must pay strict attention to the shifting of your different persons-at-arms. Even when the same “idiot” is re-running a number of programmes in order to elicit attention, these too are different, for while they are affected by the same “personality,” this “self” creates different attention eliciting programmes at different points in time and assumes different coloration's for each programme. A “self” might begin a contact with another person (surrogate bairn attendant) very cordially, and then shift through a range of armour(y)/ coloration's, until “it” is assuming a sarcastic and caustic stance/ armour(y): the cordial facial expression, cordial breathing pattern, cordial voice modulation, emotional attitude, all are different from the armour donned when ‘being sarcasm’ and using sarcasm to elicit “love.” In order to become adept at shifting you must pay strict attention to robotic activities as they are performed. Paying strict attention to the actions/ Witnessing/ loving your “self” of the moment is where you must start in order to learn shifting.

enter Champion is a Wilful shifting. It is the first example.

Soapbox

I am not too concerned with this next section, for you are all living in and maintaining Dream Keeps. Your existence is absurd. Your future is actually up to you, but... You can neither help your neighbours, nor can any Real change take place in your specie unless each individual tries to become Real and remain in Reality. You now have enough knowledge to know what is wrong and how to correct it. Marrying a tribe, rather than a “Mommy” or a “Daddy,” would be a start. But I know how strong your addiction to “love.”

Face Reality

Questions

Every country at one time or other imagines that it and it alone is or is supposed to be the New Jerusalem, just as many individuals pretend that they are gods, saints or someone special. America alone is not to become the new Jerusalem, rather this entire planet must become the New Jerusalem. Example is everything. Just as individuals must become singly Real before each has any sway over others, so too must a tribe (marital unit) become Real before influencing others. America, like all entities act as example and sway others. Pollution, famine, misery, lack of space, lack of land, encroachment on nature's domain are all caused by too many people. I suggest that America not take in immigrants for some time. Population reduction must be dealt with effectively, because the future must entail it. Members of America and many industrialised nations are not producing a growth in population. Yet, these nations are allowing the immigration of individuals from cultures that have destroyed their lands as a result of their indulgence in cultural rhetoric that not merely condones over population but directs its members to indulge in this insane practise. These negative and zero population growth nations must stop allowing immigration. America is the beautiful because it has lands and low density of humanity within its boundaries. This low population and the ramifications of sustaining low population must be apparent to all. It is absurd to imagine that the planet is infinite. Technology can sustain only so much population and then once the planet is saturated with people ...it has begun to die. Your planet is dying. Read the last line again. Now read it again. What this means is simply that as home to you it is dying. The planet will exist, but it might come to resemble the last one you inhabited (Mars). Governments have functioned on certain premises based on population growth. The increasing populations are supposed to pay the pensions and welfare of the fewer and older populations. When carnies run governments, people who can't balance their own personal check books, this dead end thinking occurs... and the planet gets so polluted that it can't sustain higher life forms.

Wealth and the technical abilities to exploit resources are constantly improving, which is why it is time for a 32 hour work week. The USA has lied about its unemployment figure for so long that it may require an adjustment less than a 32 hour work week being enforced. When the Iron Curtain came down every Tom, Dick, and Harriet sent their savings into the Blue Chip Stock Market of the United States of America, which eventually will balance out. The economies of the former Communistic countries would have been blossoming if they had invested at home, but decades of paranoia compelled them to send their wealth abroad. So employment for the moment is very good in those countries that their money was invested. Eventually, these Tom, Dick and Harriet's will sell their stocks to invest in their home states and the US stock market will collapse.

The industrialised nations must show the rest of the world that lowering populations is the answer. Why else would anyone want to move to the USA? It is a vast empty country. But it fills up quickly and will be no example at all.

Regardless, governments must rethink taxation and distribution of resources to accommodate a lowering of population. This MUST be the future. Otherwise there isn't one. There is nothing like Reality. The planet only has so much land, so much clean air. How can you people be so stupid? Always remember that presently politicians are those people that could not make it in the Realm of the private sector because they are too unReal to have a grasp of what Cause and Effect is all about. Politicians are jugglers and carnies whose forte is reading people and pretending to please whomever needs to be satisfied in a Real way or in an illusive way, so that politician can remain employed. People need to gain Reality and elect politicians that are Real and deal in a relevant way with the business of state.

How can you expect a prostitute to pay income taxes if you imagine that prostitution does not exist, for you have outlawed prostitution? How can you control the spread of HIV and other sexually transmitted diseases if you cannot locate, test and help those non-existent prostitutes and enlist their help? How can you control the

use of drugs, if you outlaw their use? Why place the responsibility to distribute drugs in the hands of adolescent children? Did you learn nothing during Prohibition? How can you learn anything from life if there are no examples of Cause and Effect, particularly in the home and in the judicial system? How can you tax drug salespersons if you pretend that they don't exist? How can anyone develop and acquire sufficient knowledge of magic (Cause and Effect), if there are interpretations of laws that vary as to the racial type, the sex, economic and ethnic groupings of individuals being judged?

Stop anyone on the streets of America and ask them about a person currently accused of committing a crime. Specifically ask them if they believe that "if she or he is found guilty, will that criminal serve its time, learn its lesson, and once paroled, never return to prison ever again?" Ask if they believe a murderer will be punished for the crime. The attitude is one that is indicative of the mind-set of the population at-large. "No," is the over riding answer to all these questions. The mind-set of the American population in regard to rehabilitation and punishment? Americans neither believe that their criminals are being punished for their crimes, nor believe they are being rehabilitated. The public is of the opinion that justice does not exist in America.

You might like to try

An eye for an eye, and tooth for a tooth

if you kill, you die

if you beat your husband, you will be beaten

what you steal, you must return, replace or pay back.

How can you know something is wrong with a person, foetus, or the planet Earth, if you cannot Sense Reality? Until you become Conscious, rely upon the law. Stop turning the cheek. Once Real, you can know. Until then rely on the LAW as afforded you by older literature. Keep it simple. Do not deny your fellow human beings their lessons. Love thy enemies and (Accept their actions) forgive them (do not emote your precious life-Force), but murderers must die and thieves must pay back every amount they have stolen.

Reincarnation
(Car tune)
or
Tune Your Karma

Also called transmigration, or metempsychosis, in religion and philosophy, rebirth of the soul in one or more successive existences, which may be human, animal, or, in some instances, vegetable. While belief in reincarnation is most characteristic of Asian religions and philosophies, it also appears in the religious and philosophical thought of primitive religions, in some ancient Middle Eastern religions (*e.g.*, the Greek Orphic mystery, or salvation, religion), Manichaeism, and Gnosticism, as well as in such modern religious movements as theosophy.

The soul is frequently viewed as capable of leaving the body through the mouth or nostrils and of being reborn, for example, as a bird, butterfly, or insect. The Venda of southern Africa believe that, when a person dies, the soul stays near the grave for a short time and then seeks a new resting place or another body--human, mammalian, or reptilian.

Among the ancient Greeks, Orphism held that a pre-existent soul survives bodily death and is later reincarnated in a human or other mammalian body, eventually receiving release from the cycle of birth and death and regaining its former pure state. Plato, in the 5th-4th century BC, believed in an immortal soul that participates in frequent incarnations.

The major religions that hold a belief in reincarnation, however, are the Asian religions, especially Hinduism, Jainism, Buddhism, and Sikhism, all of which arose in India. They all hold in common a doctrine of karma ("act"), the law of cause and effect, which states that what one does in this present life will have its effect in the next life. In Hinduism the process of birth and rebirth--*i.e.* transmigration of souls--is endless until one achieves moksha, or salvation, by Realising the truth that liberates--*i.e.*, that the individual soul (atman) and the absolute soul (Brahman) are one. Thus, one can escape from the wheel of birth and rebirth (samsara).

Jainism, reflecting a belief in an absolute soul, holds that karma is affected in its density by the deeds that a person does. Thus, the burden of the old karma is added to the new karma that is acquired during the next existence until the soul frees itself by religious disciplines, especially by ahimsa ("non-violence"), and rises to the place of liberated souls at the top of the universe.

Although Buddhism denies the existence of an unchanging, substantial soul, it holds to a belief in the transmigration of the karma of souls. A complex of psycho-physical elements and states changing from moment to moment, the soul, with its five skandhas ("groups of elements")--*i.e.*, body, sensations, perceptions, impulses, and consciousness--ceases to exist; but the karma of the deceased survives and becomes a vijñana ("germ of consciousness") in the womb of a mother. This vijñana is that aspect of the soul reincarnated in a new individual. By gaining a state of complete passiveness through discipline and meditation, one can leave the wheel of birth and rebirth and achieve nirvana, the state of the extinction of desires.

Sikhism teaches a doctrine of reincarnation based on the Hindu view but in addition holds that, after the Last Judgment, souls--which have been reincarnated in several existences--will be absorbed in God.¹⁴

Eskimos, and the peoples of the Americas believed that when a person died, if he or she were Wilful enough that they would choose to be reborn in the body of a descendant.

For every action there is an equal and opposite reaction. Reincarnation is natural, as Natural as Homo robotics. It is a requirement, which results from the frailty of human. The vehicle, physical body, with which holy enters into communion at first breath does not live long (because of the perfection of the Cinquenary Root of evil). The holy readily leaves a body, particularly now that bodies are readily available due to the many manipulations. Marriage of only two procreative humans, sex during pregnancy, culturally restrained sexual drives, concealment of the physical Reality of the human body, particularly the genitals of both sexes and

¹⁴ Copyright © 1994-2001 Encyclopædia Britannica, Inc.

bosoms of females, making sexual knowledge mystical rather than honest and Real. This creates huge imbalances. The beings of entire civilisations are imbalanced due to the insanity of the “no” programme and unReality of manipulations to create populations proficient in procreation. All of which drives the dumb animal to procreate at deadly levels. Because of the shortness of human life span, specie such as your own developed reincarnation, axiomatically. The Reality of World Cycles matters not in regards to the beliefs of Christianity, Judaism, Islam or any other for that matter, for whether a soul must re-return to Eorthe Plane until it acquires enough Will: Patience/ Discipline/ Understanding of equal portions, does not change the premise of any religion. You can't simply stop the World Cycles by pretending that reincarnation does not take place anymore. Granted some souls are complete enough to Ascend after their present lifetime. But you, do you imagine you are yet Christ-like enough to Ascend after this lifetime? Here is a simple test. Do you become emotional? If someone murdered your child, friend or lover could you forgive them, unemotionally Accept what this murderer did? Can you Accept that this beast is as it is for a reason? For that matter do you get upset if things don't go your way? If someone stole from you, would you laugh at the stupid creature or would you become emotional?

During the time of Christ everyone knew that reincarnation was a fact of nature. But many people, because they knew this to be true, suggested that they would stop this from happening to themselves by correcting their actions next lifetime instead of their present one. Many religious leaders suggested that the individual should do something about ending The World Cycles (reincarnation) today, in the present lifetime. Christ was one of these. Granted he was a Jew and Jews, like everyone else know of reincarnation. The Jews however don't stress reincarnation nor do they tend to recognise it as an excuse for not being responsible for ones actions and inaction's right here and now. They have their Cabala (Jewish mysticism) but that is kept separate and in the Realm of mental masturbation, which is to say that some of their more top heavy members give each other a lot of “word and eye-touch-love” over it. Included in these writings is the existence of the World Cycles or reincarnation. So if Jesus was a Jew, would he not have been concerned with reincarnation? Were and are the Jews? In the New Testament he says that he had been here twice before in the guise of two others. However he spoke of this in passing. Why so? It is simply that reincarnation is. That back then it was simple common knowledge, as it is to the majority of mankind today. Do you see anywhere in the Judeo or Christian writings stating the fact that the sky is blue? Common accepted knowledge.

When the Jews made their Exodus from Egypt they took with them copies of Egyptian Secrets, which are contained in the Cabalistic knowledge. They carried with them the Egyptian belief or at least the belief that the Egyptian (living gods) leaders held that they were on their last reincarnation and were due to Ascend. The heaven of their slavers is one for perfect humans ready to Ascend, rather than lesser citizens of Egypt, who must still reincarnate. The Christians and Ishmaelites, like their Jewish fathers are very concerned with the expedience towards Ascension. This is so bestial. It is called imPatience. Thought or internal dialogue takes over being. The beast attempts to go as fast physically as its internal dialogue does in conjuring a Dream Keep, alluding Reality. Faster and faster until the person dissolves from Reality (dies). So the Jews considered themselves as high and mighty as the slavers they left and adopted a like heaven. But regardless the World Cycles exist. Not for everyone, but for 99 ½ percent of the population.

The reason for telling you the Reality of reincarnation is so that you can Accept why Reality must be the way it is. Once you have an apt view of Reality it is easier to Accept the beasts. By Knowing, you won't need to as readily mirror the beasts by identifying in the individual's plight by emoting your personal and precious life-Force. In a way you can be apathetic towards the plight and lessons of others, at least until you have developed your own Will and learned to demand fealty of your own “selves.” Otherwise you will remain a puppet on emotional strings.

Celebrating the “no”/ “love” programming makes sense to you. Your bardic (sung) music, whether Opera, Country, Rock, Acid and now Rap (being nearly pure conjuring of evil) celebrates darkness and everything that is wrong with you creatures. For “no” programmed beasts hell and evil make perfect sense. As the cultures of “no” programmed beasts become better capable of supporting members, in other words the means of survival develop wealth and excesses giving the entire membership time to perfect their Asleepness,

devils are conjured and each comes and goes with the wave of exudations of dark emotings by the collective membership of exuders of darkened life-Force. The demons and hells make perfect sense. What with everyone worrying/“no”-ing incessantly evil/“their” exudations of darkly coloured life-Force devils become Real on Eorthe Plane. Recall, evil exists one place in the universe, in the minds of human. Unfortunately the fact that “each” has you leave present time in the TRANCE of anticipation/ desire for “love” makes Realisation of what you mechanically do unbeknown to yourself.

Orthodox Christianity views evil or little devils as merely a slight lapse in Consciousness of an individual during a particular situation. Perhaps you have seen a cartoon of an individual character dealing with his or her conscience. Depicted is a little angel or goody-two-shoes on one shoulder and seated on the other shoulder is a little devil. Each are vying for the individual’s attention. This is typical of the Orthodox Christian view of evil, mere lapses in Consciousness. The Roman Church and all its descendants (Baptists, Methodists, Mormons, and so forth) get very emotional (bestial), nearly hysterically giving more credence to and thus conjuring an ever growing evil force. This force is one that is nearly equal to good in strength, influence and power (only on Earth and a few other planets). That force is out of the bag, so to speak. Made so by the insanity of these human beings. For Roman type Christians evil and good are huge forces battling constantly. And with the perverted invention of original sin by Romans, evil is winning. Ridiculous. The Orthodox Christian view is far more accurate. The Roman Church and its descendant religions conjure evil into something omnipotent making it far more powerful than it should ever be imagined to be.

This is why I suggest that individuals first make themselves Absorbers and learn to Accept these exudations before they indulge and allow themselves to be drawn into the collective darkness of the rest of humanity. With Understanding, and the balancing of the other two facets of Will, Force of any coloration, even evil can be absorbed readily. Once you learn to Accept you will Realise that in Absorption there is no fear of your own being becoming corrupted. Only when you mirror the Asleepness of others is there a danger. When you Accept you do not think or define, nor do you much care who is right and who is wrong, for, after all these are mere beasts-of-the-field doing what comes Natural. Children pretending to be naughty rule them.

Any creature that emotes their life-Force darkly must be Forgiven and that force Accepted. Actually no thought is given concerning why the beast(s) emote, for Understand that they are mere Pavlovian Perverts doing what is Natural. They are doing what they will continue to do until either they demand from their “selves” other courses of action or are compelled by other individuals, institutions, the law or their destiny (their personal life path- holy’s visitation during deep sleep) to change. The more of you that can become Absorbers the better for all of humankind.

You could game, if you so chose. For example, two people are cross at one another. Their “children” have rationales for their being cross. But Accept that they each are beasts in “love” and re-running “love” programmes. Smile, enter Champion, disIntegrate. Allow part of you to compel the individual beast to expound on their rationale (slightly and strategically mirror), adding a symbol (push a button) here and there, while the Real part of you Accepts the creature’s emotings and slowly clamp on to their flow of exuded Force and they will tire right out. But don’t do it too long for you can kill them and possibly take on the bent of their grail. As it may be dark, this you do not want. Then have your own mechanical “self” suggest that they go make up with the other beast by physically hugging them. This shifts the other beast to present Time, dissolving the more negative accoutrements of “its” armour and forcing that “self” to drop its weapon or programme of elicitation of “love” as well.

Of course there will be those of you that care not whether evil continues just as long as you can feed off of these beasts. Eventually, you will be seduced by the Dark Side, trapped on Eorthe Plane possibly forever, becoming a ghost or one of the devils. This should not be in this book, but perhaps I will grow lazy or be crucified by your rabble of Pavlovian Beasts-of-the-field before I can get another book out with this warning.

There are two reasons for telling you non believers of Reality, of reincarnation. Both are mental masturbation. But Understanding is rather important for intellectual giants such as your “selves.” The Primary reason to Know is so that you can Understand the importance of ordering and simplifying Eorthe Plane. Balance results from truth. The other reason is to aid in your Acceptance of Reality and the Acceptance of why Reality

must be the way it is. Once you have an apt view of Reality it is easier to Accept the beasts. By Knowing, you won't need to as readily mirror the beasts by identifying in the individual's plight and emoting your own personal and precious life-Force. Why would you want to visit the Dream Keep of some nut case? For Reality is so, well, Real. Deal with your own Ascension before you help in anyway the Understanding of others. Also you must know when and if you must leave a creature to its own devices as well as to its own vices. Growth of Will/Consciousness and ultimately ones Ascension is up to the individual creature. Understand: you can lead a horse to water but a pencil must be lead, or rather graphite.

There are those people whom have misconstrued the main message of Jesus, which was simply, Acceptance. Acceptance is a state of being that involves hoarding life-Force rather than exuding it by indulging in emotions. These emotional Pavlovian Perverts imagine that they should love the murderer, emotionally cry over the actions of the thief, the rapist. Wrong. Granted you should Accept that the perpetrator is a mere beast-of-the-field re-running a conditioned response and that it is too Will-less to Be or have any Conscious control over its actions, which is why they must be taught via discipline or physical example to become Conscious. But to emote and feel high and filled with emotion over these beasts is detrimental. Acceptance is an attitude, an unemoting, unemotional state. It is not judgmental. It is a non state, Really. It is pure Spirituality. Allowing these beasts to continue re-running their mis-programming is not what Jesus came down here to teach. Acceptance was his sole message and Acceptance is what you individually must Real-ise, a state of being. Christ was not sent to incite you idiots to go against God's Laws: you can't allow these beasts to go on living after they murder, you must require them to return property they have stolen. Christ did not die for you to go against the Law of God.

Such animals need incentive to change even if it is fabricated, supplied or invented by others, which is an example of Magic: cause, effect and Access. Reincarnation is based on the Reality that for every action there is an equal and opposite reaction. Example is everything when it comes to dumb animals. Children become good workers if their parents worked in their ken. Children exercise if their parents exercised in their ken. Children eat right if their parents eat right in their ken. Societies that are fair raise fair children. Many of these self proclaimed Christians worry ("no") incessantly, but in particular they voice the worry that perhaps the perpetrator was falsely accused or due to his milieu, parents or lack of them, etceteras he or she should not be held responsible. Wrong. Follow the Laws of God. Reincarnation exists because of the Nature of beasts. These dumb animals re-running "no" programmes incessantly and unConsciously are as they are for a reason, Accept.

Understand also. Once in a while someone is falsely accused (someone broke the 9th commandment). Someone ends up being punished for something she did not do. In her last lifetime she may have been an incessant gossip (breaker of the 9th Commandment), thus having had a hand in the creation of much darkness on Eorthe Plane. She may have induced many fellow creatures to emote huge amounts of fear and loathing. Perhaps this false accuser sent a person to the gas chamber or electric chair, or the guillotine. Granted the judicial system is never perfect, but the falsely accused may need this. What about the creature that must die by the sword, and how about the creature that must incessantly degrade itself?

Accepting that Gods creation is perfect, that the World Cycle is meeting the requirements of God and the needs of the individual in learning its lessons, Realising Ascension is aided by Understanding, accepting that God requires murderers to die, accepting that some people must hurt others, accepting that some people must be hurt, accepting that each individual is here to learn its unique lessons, Accepting the Nature of things, the human creature in particular, is very important. Understand that the body that the holy found itself drawn towards when reincarnating is part of that creature's individual lesson. Bad or no parents, propensity to drink excessive amounts of alcohol because its mother is a drunk, being abused as a child, all are part of the person's lessons, so never let them off the hook. Accept that they are beasts-of-the-field. Keeping to the law and simplifying the law is most important. Simplicity is next to Godliness.

The "no" programmed beasts of your planet have met their demise as they have perfected their ability to survive and thus created vast wealth and made time to perfect their Asleepness. In some cases the collapse of these cultures is well documented. In every case their art became more and more symbolic and unReal, the unRealness of individuals was coddled, and the laws and values were twisted and confused. Instability resulted

from complexity. Cause and effect was rendered unrecognisable. These cultures went from an ordered and simple existence to a mish-mash of half-truths and symbols. Reality was lost and replaced by crazy beasts doing crazy things to one another. The entire reason for this book is to show you that there is a reason for what you do, that evil is a simple result of simple effects, and that these “no” programmes can be stopped and dealt with by anyone Conscious/Wilful enough to try.

Reincarnation does in no way stop the Christian heaven from being reached nor Ascension from taking place. But it does make sense of the fact that everyone is not created equal. What of the paraplegic, or the retarded person, particularly one that has no more than 26 words in its vocabulary and God is not and never will be one of them? Only reincarnation can make sense of the existence of these creatures. The crack baby, the deformed child, the child that dies soon after birth from cancer. God’s creation is perfect. Reincarnation confirms this. Never question for a second that the deformed, retarded, the murdered should not have their particular experience. Accept.

As your kind or any entire culture, tribe, becomes more Real, its members no longer reincarnate. They learn their necessary lessons sooner. But a benchmark of your Real-ness is your culture or schoolroom on Eorthe Plane. Is it God-like? God is the One Law, simplistic. In which direction is it growing? Are your taxes simple? Is your life-style quiet, Real and simplistic? Is your schoolroom simplistic enough to comprehend? Is it definitive? Can it be readily defined, mapped and manipulated? Can you practise Magic (cause, effect and Access) in your schoolroom? For if you can’t, if your milieu has grown too complex, confused and perverted, then you can never Real-ise a growth in Will/ Consciousness. The growth of Will also involves Conscious choice in situational returns to Eorthe Plane via reincarnation. This is what enables creatures like myself in commandeering a recently vacated grail, and reanimating it before the grail completely dies.

Certain people are starving. Hell is not a Reality, but reincarnating into such a body is a Real possibility, possibly over and over again until your holy *Understands*. Some people must starve for their body is a vehicle for holy’s that once refused aid to others or just were conspicuous consumers (like Americans). Perhaps it was unAccepting, prejudice or in some way trespassed against others and was not compelled to learn its lessons, which is to say the culture in which it was living ignored ‘eye for an eye and tooth for a tooth’ (cause, effect and Access). For instance, to be born to starve in America or Africa is the way it is because there are that many holy’s that need the balance (again axiomatically) that such an environment can supply them. Physical Reality is the Real teacher. However, this doesn’t mean you should ignore the needs of the starving or you may need to experience their plight. If a murderer is enabled to experience the same demise as its victim, another lifetime or three need not be wasted trying to experience what it needs to experience in order to balance, completing its holy.

Allow me to draw you a picture of Reality. Once you die your holy detaches from the physical husk. With the grail’s physical death, transference of the Spirit of the grail or lifetime of collected coloration is absorbed by holy. It has been coloured by the seconds or years of your life experiences, but the last experiences are too relevant. The reason for death in so many cases is that you have been slowly taken over by your bestiality. In other words you have perfected running and incessantly re-running your conditioned responses until you have become inSensitive. Being “no”/“love” programmed, thus ending in emoting, and thus perfected, you no longer have life-Force to emote. You Sense nothing new. Your Dream Keep is all that you see. You can no longer Sense Reality. Unable to Sense (practise Acceptance/Absorption), the body dies. The holy is anxious to get a new grail with which to establish Holy Grail once again. The body dies and Holy goes to a place of envisionment. Holy heals, and collects itself. Your dreams and desires are completely fulfilled there, for you have not the restraints of a physical body. Unfortunately the Holy is incomplete, but what is more it is perverted. Think of your present values. Think of what you call romance and art. Think of how you feel about no pain, no gain. Think of your addiction to emotions and the re-running of “love” programmes. While in that bodiless false heaven of envisionment (learning centre) Holy indulges in its coloration (values and desires). Holy fantasises, it recreates a (false) heaven wherein it plays out all the things it likes or has come to like. By its fantasy it plays out its desires and it does so to such a degree that by indulging in these it is drawn into a body on Eorthe Plane in which it will be perfectly suited. If you always wanted to be the life of the party, catch the

biggest fish, save the world, or invent the wheel, then you will be doing just that in this Plane of Illusion. Indulging so deeply in these draws you back into a body on Earth. For some with sufficient Will the Plane of Illusion becomes a Learning Centre. Not having the encumbrances of a body may increase your learning curve. You may see no reason to return to Earth's Plane. It may allow you time to see why you must return.

Most are too Will-less/ unconscious to sense what they need to learn. In this case they are drawn by the World Cycles to return. In other words you haven't the Will: to sense why you need not return, or to choose the body your Holy will breathe into. The coloration of your Holy is thus coded and decides your fate.

When cultures grow old they perfect the “no” programme to such a degree that their ideas of right and wrong are twisted and perverted. Darkness, addiction to “no”-ing is the basis of all thought on your planet. Ultimately every good religion succumbs to the basic mis-programming. Civilisations come and go, for all have been and continue to be based upon the Primary Root. The “no” programmed beast, trained in the womb to lie (intellectualise) eventually perfects its ability to subjugate its natural environment, then it accumulates wealth. This affords it the opportunity and leisure to perfect the Primary Root. This has resulted in every case in their demise.

Ayatollah Khomeini:

A man can have sexual pleasure from a child as young as a baby. However he should not penetrate, sodomising the child is OK. If the man penetrates and damages the child then he should be responsible for her subsistence all her life. This girl however does not count as one of his four permanent wives. The man will not be eligible to marry the girl’s sister.¹⁵

It is better for a girl to marry in such a time when she would begin menstruation at her husband's house rather than her father's home. Any father marrying his daughter so young will have a permanent place in heaven.¹⁶

A man can have sex with animals such as sheep, cows, camels and so on. However he should kill the animal after he has his orgasm. He should not sell the meat to the people in his own village, however selling the meat to the next door village should be fine. "If one commits the act of sodomy with a cow, a ewe, or a camel, their urine and their excrements become impure, and even their milk may no longer be consumed. The animal must then be killed and as quickly as possible burned."¹⁷

This brings to mind creatures that believe in original sin. To be taught that they were born evil is so typical of “no” programmed Pavlovian Perverts. An entire segment of human believes this, but to actually write it down on paper and thus conjure such an entrapment, such a Dark Dream Keep is perverted beyond comprehension. Earth is That Dark Planet and will remain so as long as you imagine it thus. Granted having punishments of death for the murderer is a “no,” but as long as 97 percent of you are unConscious Homo robotics, public example is most important. To learn Magic requires examples of cause, effect and Access. For every action there must always be an equal and opposite reaction, to have otherwise creates unRealness, creates fantastic Dream Scapes, prisons over whose Walls Reality is indiscernible.

Talk is cheap. Actually words are the tools of dreamers, the building blocks of dreams, which is why children learn from experience more readily than via words, which is why some form of tangented-Tribalism need exist as example. This is also true of any grail. You can talk and talk and never get through, but a 2X4 or baseball bat can Really strike home. Remember when dealing with animals, first you must get their attention before you can communicate with them, particularly the really numb ones, such as humans. Think of all those that made Imperial Japan and Nazi Germany possible, both by their active participation as well as those that lacked the will to just say no. I recall an old guy named Boo-Boo Brooks, whom was more than once asked if he would like a beer. His retort was, “don’t know how to say no, yes, yes, yes, yes, yes.” Boo-Boo thought the politicians should serve instead of lecture. Talk is particularly useless as a teaching method in the case of any individual that has a RW(M)AA that longs for the “love” of lecture, argument or any of the various forms of “word-touch-love.” Again I must stress the value and need for the use of the 2X4 when it comes to communicating with a mule, many animals or a jackass, such as Homo robotics. Boo-Boo, the Governor as we called him, refused to, “just say no,” for he enjoyed drinking. Choice. Cause and effect. Codify and simplify

¹⁵ From Khomeini's book, "Tahrirolvasyleh", fourth volume, Darol Elm, Gom, Iran, 1990

¹⁶ From Khomeini's book, "Tahrirolvasyleh", fourth volume, Darol Elm, Gom, Iran, 1990

¹⁷ The little green book, Sayings of Ayatollah Khomeini, Political, Philosophical, Social and Religious with a special introduction by Clive Irving, ISBN number 0-553-14032-9, page 47

taxes, laws, everything. But be sure that Justice remains blind and fair. You must lead the jackass to water. And sometimes you must force it to drink?

I canst helps it, my father I never knew and besides my ancestors were once slaves, which is why I am so screwed up. My mom was a high class white bitch that ignored me and was more interested in staying drunk and having sex with every Tom, Dick and Harriet, than she was concerned about me. I don't know why I did it, but if you let me go, I can do it again and maybe I will remember why I keep doing it. What's a few or thirty more car accidents or a few or thirty more dead people? What's a few more convenient store robberies? Someone has got to do them. I'm just trying to get in touch with myself. It is easy to understand why Hip-Hop culture is dark, incessantly repeating and conjuring darkness. It is so typical. The "no," or I mean, "new" generation. The Blues, Rock and Roll, Country down to hip-hop... the ever increasing slide into darkness. It be cool. Groove on the words, man. Don't you just "love" the darkness, the art, the corruption, inadequacy and perversion? Long streams of words to conjure a hell out of Eorthe. Get with it, Dude! Darkness is here to stay. Conjure that darkness, be the misfit, wear the mis-fitting clothing. Get fucked over by your lover. It is so cool to be misunderstood. It is so cool to be negative, confused and misunderstood and un-understandable. It is so hip to be on drugs. It is cool to be bad. Bad is good, it is cool. Get yourself a few bitches and do it right. Mediocrity not only rules but I am not worth shit and neither is anyone. It is so cool to conjure with a constant flow of words a Dream Keep of conflict and darkness. Or is it? Hip-Hop is the diagnostic indicator of your collective Asleepness. And brother and sister are you ever dark. Hip-Hop, Rock and Country are all celebrations of everything wrong with the beast. This musical celebration use to be more artistic, with rhythm, melody, beat and a few words perhaps, but now it is pure conjuring of darkness: words only, one dark symbol on top of another. Humankind exudes evil, makes a god out of collectively imagined and conjured evil forces called devil or Satan (their devas of evil), and then they feed this creature of their own invention in these celebrations.

In your music, TV dramas, fashion, as well as your (supposedly) Christian gatherings you give credence to, and thus worship, this dark force you were trained as children to exude in re-running your "love" programmes. You constantly celebrate evil and with your unConscious exudations you feed it.

Things to Experience

Your holy was driven out by “selves” and can only return during deep repairing sleep. At these times it lays down memories or paths to be taken the next day as things to experience. Quite often your holy will give you a hint of the lesson it needs to experience via a newspaper article, book, play, TV show, witnessing the plight of others, but if this doesn't work then the next step is quite often understandably a bit more physical in nature. It may come to the point of being near fatal and even debilitating (paraplegic), if that is the lesson your holy needs to learn, or there exists no other alternative but to slow its vehicle (grail) down and compel it to pay attention. The grail, animal (your body) vehicle has nothing to say about it. Once you learn from the experience, you may repair or remove yourself from the offensive or oppressive situation your holy has led you to encounter. This is a matter of the growth of your Will. The fact that you are somewhat Conscious makes these hints possible, and as your Consciousness grows by spending more time in Reality, the more clear will the hints become. Re-incarnation is natural and unique to the situation upon your planet. Contributing factors are short life spans, the Reality of your bestiality, what with your Pavlovian nature, the now globally valued ability to dream or intellectualise since the emergence of the keeper race (white) who had to be made spiritually retarded so that its tool making ability would be enhanced (intellectualism, which also drives you to incessantly fornicate). Tools such as nuclear bombs, on yet to be built long distance missiles, may one day save humankind from their planet's periodicity. Now that the ability to intellectualise, dream has fulfilled its function; it comes time to regain equilibrium. Internal, as well as unConsciously obsessive external dialogue (dream weaving) must be reduced so that the FORCE can be Accessed. Stop conjuring/ stop being wordy. Stop: watching plays, TV dramas, listening to wordy music, having fantasies that mirror Asleepness.

Many people imagine that suicide can release them from their lesson(s). Suicide can in certain situations be an act of Will over bestiality which is a lesson sometimes, but if it is not, then the holy will merely find itself searching for a grail that will/ must afford it its lesson(s) in a subsequent lifetime. What this means is that despite suicide, understand that you will probably be reborn into a body that is in the same physically debilitated disposition that you left your last body, or soon will be, by choosing euthanasia or committing suicide. Picture yourself reincarnating into a starving population as a small child that will die in a matter of months after its birth, after much pain. You had three more weeks of pain to *Understanding* and then sweet release, but you could not await the lesson and subsequent transition, so you came back for this Realisation as this child in pain and near death by reincarnating.

You may come to a seemingly impassable Wall. You may continue to lapse in your endeavour to pay attention (love and witness your “selves”). Don't get discouraged. With a growth in Will eventually you will have the fealty of “selves.” Practise more Will generally. Perhaps lose weight, start an exercise regimen, or take up a mental dexterity such as the study of math, or anything that requires full attention/ Will. Twenty four hours a day you must be Conscious. This practising of Will can not only cure you, but more importantly it can deny your Asleepness/ dissolve the Walls, which allows insights.

in-sight noun

The capacity to discern the true nature of a situation; penetration. The act or outcome of grasping the inward or hidden nature of things or of perceiving in an intuitive manner.¹⁸

Sometimes these insights can allow conclusions to a life of misunderstandings.

What this means is that despite suicide, understand that you will probably be reborn into a body that is in the same physically debilitated disposition that you left your last body, or soon will be, by choosing euthanasia or committing suicide. Suicide is a choice, should be a guaranteed freedom and right of the individual. And upon a planet over burdened with population and so pollution, euthanasia should be a painless government offering, so too sterilisation. I said ‘probably’ because for some, the act of suicide, choosing euthanasia is an act of Will and in this rare case such a choice may be an act of Will that the individual needs to practise. A

¹⁸Excerpted from *The American Heritage® Dictionary of the English Language, Third Edition* © 1996 by Houghton Mifflin Company. Electronic version licensed from INSO Corporation; further reproduction and distribution in accordance with the Copyright Law of the United States. All rights reserved.

cowardly person or a person that normally is too Will-less and vacillating to make a decision may remedy an imbalance in their being by making such a choice. Although, most times life in pain is part of the lesson, either intellectual pain, emotional pain or physical pain or all three. Only the individual can know and if they are too Asleep to know, still the choice must be the individual's. Choice is everything! Without CHOICE there is no learning. By using the (old) Law, the murderer makes a choice when it murders: the murderer knows that, if caught, she/ he will die. Cause, effect and Access.

If the holy can do nothing with the grail's body it is at a given time in communion with, then it will up and leave that body, taking grail with it, or rather making the spirit (coloration) of grail part of holy: that grail's accumulated life experience (collected and coloured life-Force). The body may be left alive, a mere beast or man, for the hue has left. Sometimes the grail or life-Force of the body does not feel it is through with the body and will not leave it or lacks the will to detach. In such a case suicide is an act of Will, a holy act. Only the individual and other Real/ Sensitive people can know this. It must be up to the individual to make this decision and all decisions. There can and must be no laws to deny a grail its choices. The choosing of experiences: prison, drug, death due to committing murder, sexual, neighbourhood, educational, religious must be accessible. Laws should be well defined and adhered to equitably, so that learning Cause, Effect and Access or Magic can be possible. If a law exists enforce it. If the majority members of a municipality do not want the law, then get rid of it. If you don't like a law, but it is a (democratically) voted in law, then move into a community with whose laws you do agree.

If a bad choice is made by an individual then re-incarnation or the law must take care of it. Or as you often hear on this planet, "God, will take care of it." Actually, because of your collective Asleepness God can only have very little effect on you, and only as a diffused FORCE, which few individuals know how to Access. This is your Realm. So it is your problem, your Ascension is up to you.

This is an ordered planet. There is a reason for everything that occurs here, both to you, to entire populations, and to others, but slowly this is growing towards chaos just lately. Accidents don't happen. Lessons do, and "no"/ "love"/ "Womb" programmes take place, and will continue to be called accidents as long as there is a specie called Homo robotics. Nazi Germany, Serbs of Bosnia, Khmer Rouge all are your teachers. As an example they show that mankind has in fact the misprogramming I have here described, which can be addressed. 1999, Nostradamus, "the world will (can) end (change) as you know it." This change as much as rebirth is entirely in your hands. The devil or mankind's collective evil is axiomatic and is entirely unnecessary. Whether wars continue, you continue to emote, famines continue, diseases continue to spread, the starvation and poor quality of life perpetrated by the obsolete doctrines of a presently unConscious Catholic Church due to their insistence in procreation of anti-survivalistic proportions continues to be promulgated, are all up to you the individual.

Reincarnation can be a cop-out and a result of copping-out. If you can become Real and so bring about the re-establishment of Holy Grail in yourself, then you will be more easily directed by your Holy and thus not need to reincarnate. When/ if you find yourself in a difficult or even mundane situation you must Accept it as a lesson, but understand that such a lesson would have been unnecessary if you had been paying attention earlier in your life (even a matter of seconds earlier). Understand that if you had sufficient Will, that you would not be in such a bad situation. Do not pray to a surrogate bairn attendant such as the father-figure god mentioned in the Bible. The Christians saying, "sit on the right hand of God the Father Almighty" is really fraught with Pavlovian Perversion. It infers left-handers won't make it to heaven, and that GOD is a male, and a father, who has humped and pumped some animal with grunts and oo-ah's. GOD is pure Will. To become part of the FORCE or GOD, you must Do. You must work Magic. You must acquire Will. To acquire Will you must practise Will. When something goes wrong understand that it is due to your lack of Will (not some God that you have to appease or some devil that made you do it). If you wish to internalise or externalise verbally, do so, not to a make believe bairn attendant (some god), but rather to the specific "self" that ran the programme (practise ceptal (Keep Talk) or what is called "self" hypnosis. Beseech "it" to change, but understand that any word-touch-love feeds RW(M)AA, and Ceptal only works on a specific RW(M)AA while "it" is (ruling you) wearing a specific coloration (is in the specific time frame of "its" creation- when it devised that specific dexterity which

you are attempting to reprogramme). Actions are more powerful than words. You cannot eat words. Words are unReal. If anyone is hurt by words; they want to be hurt; they are weaving a Dream Keep wherein they are guilt or “it” wants to be abused delightfully. They are taking noise (words and sounds) and changing it/ colouring it into a familiar “no.” Lead and become Aware of the specific “self” responsible for Pavlovian re-enactments/ emotional reactions. This is upon which you must concentrate. Ceptal works, but witnessing “self,” being always Conscious is much better. If you were Conscious you would have not allowed that “self” to Asleepily perform “its” programme. This most effective way to re-programme the “self” is by example, for to become Real enough to become Aware of the “self” that is performing that given task, removes that RW(M)AA’s many layers of armour(y). Simplified. In effect you are one with that “child.” Your *self* must become its bairn attendant. You replace “its” surrogate bairn attendant will with your Will: that “self” becomes one with the grail or self via the Will of *self*. The grail becomes Grail (“selves” become merely dextrous servants to the true-self/ *self*) and holy can then rejoin this Grail creating Holy Grail. What a nice and complicated fairy tale: bunch of words. Actually it is a lack of words that brings about Holy Grail. You have become a Dreamer and big-headed beast, so as to hold your attention I must write repetitive and tedious verbosity. Hopefully you will know how absurdly boring your Dream Weaving is for this book’s format is not unlike your Dream Keep.

The prayer stance that some people indulge that involves shutting down “selves” is identical to enter Champion. This in fact allows Access to Force. God is your interpretation of Force personified. Unfortunately most beasts merely are wishing and fantasising. These pretend that their god is Daddy and they are asking Daddy for miracles. For a few, God/ the Force actually is Accessed and fills them. For most this praying to a Daddy-god is a cop out, blaming father-figure-god or devil, is the same thing: more intellectual verbosity, bullshit.

STOP IT

(remember, only you can prevent forest fires)

Rely on yourself, grow your own Will

If you did not run the Secondary Root of evil programme in its many forms, did not perfect it to the Cinquenary Root of evil, then you would live longer and perhaps long enough to enable your Holy Grail to learn all of its lessons (to Accept). Maybe re-incarnation would not be necessary? Actually longevity has nothing to do with Ascension. It is also a misnomer to say someone is an old soul, for there is no such thing as time except on a specific planet if a soul is attached to a grail and that grail, ... bla, bla, bla. (Old souls refers to those whom have acquired more Will/ Acceptance) hopefully Ascension will take you off here, and time won’t matter, won’t exist. Time and re-incarnation will exist on this planet until you no longer need it, until you no longer make it exist, or cause it to happen by your lack of Will/ Consciousness. Many people figure their Ascension is given them by a “Daddy”-god, so they talk to themselves (a “self”). Or they pretend that re-incarnation is the doing of a “Daddy”-god and out of their control. This is merely more “Womb”-ing on their part, more cop-out. GOD is Will. That’s all. All that takes place here is your doing or lack there of. Granted the attitude praying puts you in can work, but you must learn to SHIFT into this attitude at Will: enter Champion. Spiritual or Real state does not need an incantation or prayer for you to Access FORCE. On the contrary words are imprisoning.

Will, that is the measure of a Holy. Words, intellectualism or mind is a tool, much like a missile, stone when thrown, but mind is only that.

It is the union of Body and Soul or Holy Grail that is so very important. If it had not been for the precarious situation of your planet’s periodicity, then the white race would not have had to over develop its mind. Presently mind is that hideous strength¹⁹. Mind is a trap, a prison, an encumbrance of mazes. It is the cause of utter nonSense, which is the inability to Sense and Absorb and thus prohibits Ascension.

Re-incarnation is as Real (or unReal) as you are collectively. Re-incarnation need not take place, but it is presently a requirement for 97percent of your specie’s population. Memories of past lives often take place early in a child’s life, particularly when that death was a shock and the person was unprepared and had not been given

¹⁹ That Hideous Strength, by C. S. Lewis, 1990 Repr. of 1946 ed. text, (0-02-571255-1), Macmillan

a chance to Accept or was unwilling to Accept her or his death. Upon this planet, as a result of its inhabitant's collective unConsciousness, re-incarnation does exist; it is part of your Reality.

This knowledge may be of interest to you: if after you leave your present body due to an act of Will or depletion of Will in death, you will find yourself discorporate and you may stay that way as long as you can Accept your position out of time and space (bodiless). You will re-incarnate when you indulge more and more in recall of your former life on Eorthe Plane. If you Accept what you have learned, Absorb the FORCE of it, then there is no reason to return.

The sky is and was blue in the time of Christ, but there is no mention of it in the New Testament. Reincarnation was an Accepted concept in Christ's day, but he loathed the way people constantly copped out saying typically that, "Well, I'll take care of it next time around." If it had not been for the imPatience of zealots, then belief in reincarnation would have survived in Christian rhetoric up to the present. Just as Spiritual leaders, in countries that still Accept reincarnation as a possibility for less Willed people, tell their followers to act now and not to wait for another lifetime, so too did the Jewish Spiritual leaders of Jesus' day constantly encourage more spiritual activity by their followers so that Ascension might take place. It hardly matters if you believe in reincarnation or not, for it will take place regardless of your beliefs. The problem is that once a person believes that there is no reincarnation, then they invent purgatory, hell and all sorts of silliness, instead of working NOW to gain Ascension. The same people that used the phrase, "Well, I'll take care of it next time around," now imagine that it will be acceptable to visit a purgatory for a while, because after all "Christ/ god is all love and Acceptance and will forgive."

In regards to Christians, you and all daughters and sons of God or Christ, ' having acquired Acceptance, will Ascend, but the rest will have to try again and again. Don't get confused. God is God, and Jesus acquired enough Will to reincarnate at Will (he rose again from the dead) or, as he chose, Ascended once he became the Christ. The unEmotional state or purely Spiritual state of Acceptance, that Jesus became as the Christ, you must become individually in order to Ascend. Otherwise...you must reincarnate.

Design Changes

Parents have taught the beast to “love.” Many of their programmes are anti-survivalistic. There is only one person on Earth that can change or reprogramme the individual: that person is the person him or herself. Threat of extermination or loss of privilege may be incentive enough. It may require denial of food or a great deal of forced labour. Basically the animal must have good incentive to change. If a prison/ learning centre does not require much of its attendees then there is no reason for that person to alter its programming.

If a person knows that he or she will have its sexual organ removed so that sexual stimulation will no longer be possible as a direct result of raping someone, then rape may not be worth it. We know that most rapists rape for a need to have power over others. So? Having the knowledge that he or she will have the sexual pleasure part of this trip removed is still teaching Magic. Example is everything, and it is all we have as a teaching method. Over use of Words are what made rape, murder, etceteras seem sensible. To know that you will die for committing murder is the best deterrent to discourage anyone contemplating murder as a viable course of action, particularly hominoids. Presently there are no actual Effects in American judicial and criminological systems severe enough to Cause anyone to reprogramme their RW(M)AA. This is true of theft and murder, as well as rape. There are so many systems of improving and changing a person. If a person knows that it will most likely not have to pay for a wrong, why not do it? Why practise discipline to thwart ones bestiality? Christ said forgive thy enemies, but did not say to let a murderer go unpunished. Acceptance even for murder is important for the survivors of the victim, for emoting over the loss is a loss of life-Force. It can discolour the indulger’s Grail, thus altering the final hue of the Holy, and deplete the very thing a person needs to Ascend. Jesus was teaching Acceptance for the individual’s Ascension. Christ’ message was not for people to ignore the Laws of Conduct given mankind by Allah or the Hebrew god Yahweh. An eye for an eye and so forth is etched in stone, God’s stone, on God’s planet. Acceptance is an attitude an individual must maintain in order to Ascend. This does not mean that a murderer should be allowed to live, or that a Wall Street embezzler does not have to pay back the entire sum he or she embezzled, even if it means digging ditches for the rest of his or her life in a work house or prison system. Christ’ message was that you should not waste precious life-Force emoting over a loss and the bad and bestial actions of others. In Freudian terminology, the (supposed) son of God would never go against the Laws of his Father (or Mother, if you colour God as a female).

If you are unable to remove or reprogramme the inept and wasteful armour(y) of your RW(M)AA and reach a point of Understanding, stopping the exudation of precious life-Force, then your holy will induce you to experience things that holy believes will aid you in your quest.

Coveners live in Reality and suck and store life-Force, for Ascension is our major concern. Spirituality like Reality is quantitative. To other life styles spirituality is an unreachable and mystical force. To a coven Force is no mystery. In a coven all is free-associated. Children are not driven to “no” for “love.” Rather they remain Sensual sponges. Knowledge merely becomes one more thing Absorbed. The re-establishment of universally practised Tribalism is a necessary design change, for a sense of community/ compassion/ universal empathy/ responsibility is not taught out of books, rather it must be free-associated. Only within an autonomous tribal unit, wherein the social, economic and political systems are apparent and locally combined, can the beast comprehend the workings of the macrocosm.

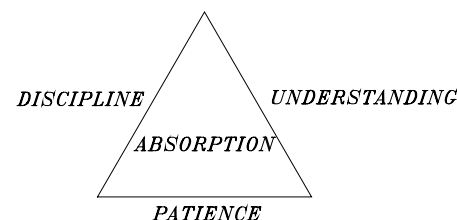
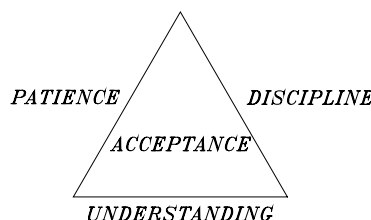
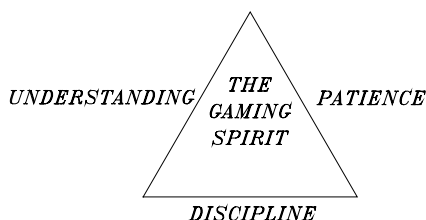
In the First World countries wherein there are huge impersonal regimes that exist, morality and communalism have become incomprehensible to whole populations that have been raised as nonSense-able dreamers in wealthy cultures that require little or nothing of their members and thus individuals are free to perfect their arsenals of attention elicitation via doing, saying, wearing, speaking the negative. Parents leave the child’s sight when they travel miles from home to the economic derivative of the work place. In the suburbs many don’t know, nor do they have any reason to know, the name of their next door neighbour. The rationale is made simply. All a “no” programme beast needs to do is “no” the fact that they need their parents love and later their neighbours’ “love” and then they flash the *Reward* of emotion. After “no” comes the Limbo state of

“Womb.” Who needs its neighbour to survive? Who needs to pay attention to their job? These huge nations have developed cultures that are presently dream inducing, as are the impersonal technological specialisation’s that maintain them, but they do use a universal language and have a codified law requiring tolerance of religion (discipline for Acceptance). Herein lies the hope. Herein lies the thread that will maintain enough cohesion until members of the industrialised nations re-discover Tribalism.

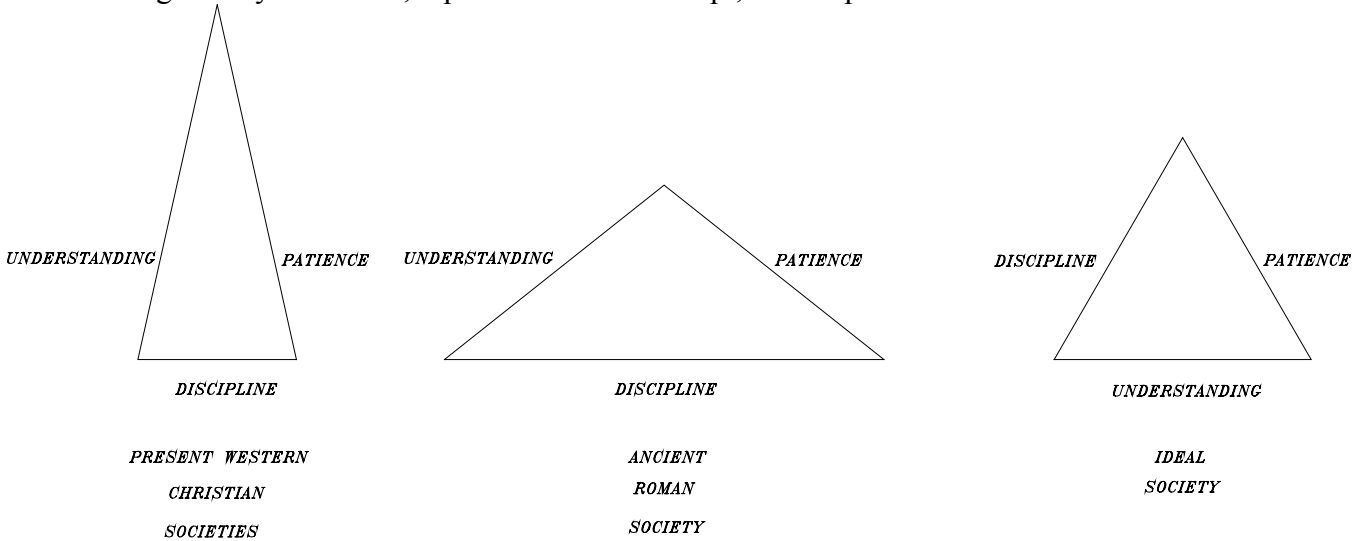
Hopefully Africa will never produce the Charlemagne, Napoleon, or Garibaldi. Africa will never create a nation or universal religion that embraces and unifies all its nations, all its tribes. Hopefully Africans will never learn the ingredient that people who lived for millennium in cold climates learned in order to survive cold winters unless they are corrupted by the value systems of other races. This is the concept of co-operation, continental co-operation, which is being called on to enable re-building of drought ravaged Africa by outsiders. I want to tell you that Africans have remained in suspended animation, so to speak, to preserve their particular knowledge. They are far less heavy headed than other peoples, so they are far more harmonious and Real and Sensitive to the bent of the Earth and they more readily Sense the coloration of others. African-Americans have been corrupted somewhat, but still they hold a thread of Sensuality. In most cases these hybrids think too much and so emote far too much, but they Sense and mirror, then express the coloration of the American psyche. If their interpretation reveals animosity and disharmony do not imagine that they are reading this into their interpretation of the coloration of the American bent, rather they are being honest. They describe what they Sense, which is plain in their art and music. It should scare the heck out of you, for this is their Sensing, a mirror image of the American Culture in regards to them. If they will join socially, genetically, politically and economically in the American racial melting pot tribally in such an industrial nation’s environment, a place that is open and free, yet connected by common morality and language, then America and thus the Planet will Realise great things and the American Caucasians in particular will be aided in their endeavour to make up for their atrophied spirituality.

Don’t be confused. In the United States integration was a must as was the assassination of President Lincoln, for his deal with a group of supporters, was to deport all those of African descent after the North won the War between the States in America, for his Northern supporters knew that they could never compete with cheap “Darky” labour. I use “Darky” because it denotes the time frame of which I refer. Lincoln’s vice-president knew nothing of this deal. The fact that Northern carpetbaggers would go south and invest there and integrate their Northern companies with the South nullified their apprehensions, as did the migration of Darky’s north as a result of the Darkies falsely interpreted Northern love of them. After all hadn’t the Northerners freed them? Paradox. Americans were easily moved to do the right thing for the wrong reasons. Booth ridiculously yet understandably did the right thing for the wrong reasons. It was so very easy to induce him to perfectly “love” (hate) Lincoln to death. These are but design changes that we directly made possible (including the deal that this group of supporters made with Lincoln to get the War started). Lincoln was the one to fight and win this War. But Johnson was the one to keep the Black seeds in American soil, for he never knew by whom and why, deals were made with Lincoln to get him elected. Many design changes seem un-Natural at first.

Only a few of you will attempt to live more Tribally. Your life-style will prove so very advantageous, that others will follow your lead. Jackie Gleason in the show, “The Honeymooners,” playing the character of Ralph Kramden, always said that man was supposed to be the King of his castle. Such a culture that maintains an illusive idea as this is ripe for those that decide to live tribally.



One day universal love/ Acceptance will be the balanced and Real state of an Earth population of predominantly Homo Emovens. Until that can be accomplished discipline must be practised. Acceptance must not be confused with understanding and patience. In other words, quit turning the other cheek, quit allowing “no”-ers to get away with theft, rape and murder. Accept, but keep God’s laws.



The design Changes are effected by the publication of books, the placement into governmental systems of individuals that will Sense the needs of civilisation to change laws, the birth and nurturing of individuals that will re-discover Tribalism in the industrial nations and foster universality on an entire planet. Many people imagine that they individually thought up design changes such as the invention of dynamite and the development of nuclear energy. During deep sleep the RW(M)AA shut down and a person’s holy is allowed back into the body. Certain individuals have learned to shift their beingness and enter short naps of incite or via Will develop in maturity a state of Holy Grail to Access design changes from the Council instantaneously. Communicating directly to the grail, design changes are afforded the individual, who in turn may offer these changes to the public. (unfortunately the more Asleep, dreamy, you allow your “selves” to make you, the less gets through- you are now almost completely inAccessible). There is nothing new in this book. I may not supply all the relevant bibliographies, but there will be enough to bombard you with more of the same knowledge found in this book. These are but suggestions. However, look if you can, and Sense that any form of Tribalism that you practise within the confines of the industrial nations will make your life easier. This is the test of any design change: will you Access more energy while consuming less energy?

Once weaned, children raised in this suggested marriage of perhaps 8 mature males and 8 mature females will afford the children many parents, a diversified personal environment. This number is hypothetical. In any politically autonomous region statistics may be valuable to define the ratios of males to females within a tribal unit. Early on this statistic may be irrelevant. Ideally sixteen intimates (sexually, if it is a procreative coven, and in every other way), a coven, make up a ladder to Ascension.

The situation can develop, if the members of this Tribal unit so designs, whereby one female and male takes one day out of eight and devotes their efforts to creating an environment safe for the bairn to free-associate: giving the other members of the tribe the freedom to maintain necessary facilities of survival and to free-associate that which they fancy. 16 members is the ladder, but a tribe can be of any number above 15. The ceiling is defined by the level of Consciousness/ Will of its members. One day there will be no limit, for you will all become Conscious/ empathic.

It is important that the design of tribes be autonomous groupings that are self contained in regard to their political, social and economic systems, so that these remain perceivable and accessible to all the members of the tribe. Only in this way can a simple beast comprehend communion and the inter connectivity of the peoples of the planet. Tribalism must be the example, the root, yet trade with the rest of humankind must always be open

and freedom of access must be a way of life. Recall that the main function of coven initially is to require that participants remain in present time.

You are such Castle-unConscious creatures that you cannot even imagine loving and living with more than 1 individual let alone 16 all together. This fact is an indicator of your Asleepness. It indicates utter insanity.

Four is the number of Eorthe: the Four Eorthe Elements, animals, man being one of these.

Five is the number of human, nomad, change, freedom, tolerance, adaptability .

Six is the number of Responsibility, family, coven, love, community.

Seven is the number of Absorption, Quietude, Spirituality.

Eight is the number of Magic, manipulation.

Nine is Humanitarianism, Completeness.

You can never Real-ise the Seven without the Six: Tribal-Consciousness.

The “love” programme perfected to hatred. In your short history of Earth this perfection has destroyed all your great cultures along with their accomplishments. In each and every case a few Pavlovian Perverts have entombed entire civilisations in a Keep of misery. They have destroyed their lands and have been bent upon the destruction of human kind, indulging and perfecting their “love” programmes. Their religions may be the most spiritual on earth yet the “no” programme has dissolved many and entombed their adherents. Members live only to “love.” “love” has been so perfected that they hate themselves and “love” misery. They know only “no”-ing and nothing else. “no”-ing so rules them that it has become their true religion. Pervading their art and twisted their ideas of right and wrong. It has defined their heroes and perverted their laws and values. They negate everyone and everything. They practise paranoia and hatred. They “no” everything that is outside of their way. They make everyone a “no,” both their own membership and most definitely the members outside of “the only faith:” Catholics, Moslems, Capitalists, Communists. Religions are templar, which is to say that they are systems to manipulate fellow human beings. Islam is an esoteric religion, steeped in “no”-ing, perverted to the nth degree. There are “no” programmed beasts practising and perverting Islam, just as there are Christians perverting the teachings of Christ. It is not the religion that is the problem. Rather it is the mis-programming of the beast that perverts as it practises the various esoteric religions.

Let’s say you have taken a new job, joined a new church or joined a new club or society. During a congregating, perhaps at tea or coffee time everyone is at a loss for something to discuss. You can become an assured hit at such a gathering of Homo robotics by doing what these beasts find most Natural and right: a “no” being voiced mirrors your fellow beast’ Asleepness. It hardly matters from where the “no” is derived. It could be a current news item, something that you did wrong or was done to you, or it could be a negation of the activities of ‘them’ whom are outsiders. The most common is to “no” the climate or weather: if it is wonderfully sunny and dry one merely voices and colours, “When is it ever going to rain?” If it is rainy, one merely “no”s this: “I wonder if we will ever see the sun again?” This works every time. You can get these beasts emoting and they will feel alive, and then this will make you a hit with everyone.

Recall that there are two religions. The religion of the individual as it attempts to acquire Will and accumulate life-Force in order to Ascend. And then there are all the templar religions that endeavour to guide segments of humankind in a specific direction. This direction is anything that the leader or templar of this religion or government imagines as desirable. IMAGINES. This could be wealth, “loving” conflict, ... almost anything. Cremation of six million, anyone?

Thinking too much thwarts the endeavour of Ascension, but thinking is necessary in order to survive the periodicity of your home. These templar religions are part of the Earth’s periodicity. If they induce emotings then stay away from religions of this sort. If they demand lack of free choice, do not go softly to your slaughter. Given time “no” programmed beasts will destroy themselves. Keep your distance no matter how good their rhetoric sounds. For the problem is usually not the rhetoric, but rather the interpretation of doctrine by beasts-of-the-field that have been trained to perform the Primary Root of evil, perfecting it to their eventual and premature demise.

This system I have suggested is just that, a suggestion. Make it a religion and you will kill it. I have often been asked by students where are the Druidic books. Words are tools for Asleepness. The term Druid is a

word someone invented. The old way of life is handed down by example, by word of mouth, but above all, it is by example. Words are used to hypnotise a group of or one of the Dream Walkers. Words are used to conjure. Keep reading a bible and keep repeating a phrase and you will become imprisoned in that Keep.

You can enter into coven. Try for a few years to help one another to build a ladder, but if you can't do so, then go your separate ways. For if you remain too close for too long attempting but not succeeding, you may become a negative religion of self nay-sayer's. That is where most templar religions go wrong. Acceptance is vital. Everyone's own lessons must be respected. It is better to dissolve groups trying to become coven if negativity cannot be ended, than to become darkness and a home for evil. A bit of advice: The member that points the finger the most ("no"s everyone incessantly), negates the efforts of members individually, while spouting clichés incessantly, tends to be the very one that keeps a study group from Realising coven. Coven is pure love/ empathy.

Latin was so helpful as the diplomatic language of Christendom. For modern civilisations to survive harmoniously there must be created a universal language for contracts, agreements, laws and technology. Glyph or computer designed language may be helpful, for phonetically designed languages tend to change, devolving to a less Real and more sophisticated form. This too is a necessary design change that must be applied. With the birth of the computer this is now possible. A diplomatic language must be stagnant, must remain boringly unaltered, so there can exist no misunderstanding as to weights and measures and even verbs and nouns. Laws as well as punishments must be codified universally. A person's race, religion and economic disposition should not enter into the learning of cause, effect and Access, for Ascension is never going to be possible unless an entity learns Magic, acquires Will, but then such an endeavour is the Religion of the One Law, of Ascension, rather than a templar religion. This is why laws are based upon religious doctrine. Whether punitive or rehabilitative, Ascension is the desire, yet templar manipulation is the result. Keep the law simple and leave the mis-programmed beasts, because they are beasts, at the mercy of World Cycles. Death is for the murderer. A thief must pay back every amount stolen and pay for the repair of everyone's life they have altered, while replacing all the property they destroy during the theft. If you beat someone, you will be beaten in the same way. If you poison someone, you must suffer the same poisoning (corporate head that allowed neighbouring communities to be poisoned). But always Know that Acceptance of the misdeeds of others is very important, both to disallow emotings that feed evil and at the same time deplete a person's life-Force. Simplicity is akin to Godliness.

Suggestions

Just as Rome, Phoenicia and civilisations of which you have never known and never heard, destroyed themselves; you may destroy your great societies. You are a tribal animal. The baboon has its troop, man its tribe. Once you stray outside of this structure, particularly as expert “no”-ers, your Asleepness grows unchecked, and as your toolmaking improves with the growth of intellect (your ability to dream); present Time requires not your Awareness, holds not your attention, instead you dream incessantly building and elaborating a Castle-unConsciousness, which is the opposite of Tribal Consciousness. The conjuring of your Dream Keep is done by “no”-ing: unConsciously doing negative and destructive things. You spend most of your time in a state of Apprehension, perusing Reality for a “no” as *Stimulus*. Apprehension, tensed, stressed out. This is humankind’s Lemming Process. It is time you discontinue the demonic short circuit and come to present Time/Reality; just before you once again self-destruct as you have so many times in your planet’s past. Your tools are needed to survive the periodicity of your Planet, but it is hoped that it will not be at the inducement of yet another collapse. Your weapons are awesome, and your Primary Root well perfected.

There are laws that would have aided in a return to a more tribal and consequently responsive, compassionate and Real society, but this (enclosure law) would have slowed greed and the growth of investment capital to improve and further your tool-making processes. One tool in particular: solar fusion or bomb making could only have happened as a result of wars of mass “no”-ing. These mass slaughters could only be a product of non-Tribal societies, whose membership was/ is particularly unReal, numb, inSensitive, and incompassionate. Such a culture grows more quickly out of a wealthy and “no” programmed one. The ability to thwart the natural Lemming Process long enough to have your tool-making sophistication reach its present heights has been an endeavour of significant proportions requiring more utter nonsense than the verbosity that makes up this ridiculous book. So don’t squander your technological achievements. Think of the many people that died in World War II so that you would gain this knowledge.

All of the major religions were started as divine ones, but due to the “no” programme, they quickly have degenerated so as to fill the “love” quotas of the perspective beasts that practise them. The Catholic Church for instance has been instrumental in maintaining “no”-ing. Look at the traditions of “no”-ing it has spawned: groups of “self” “no”-ers, and killer religious cults. History is full of these “no”-ers, who were supposed to be spiritual.

Baptists, who, in the Southern United States go to church and proclaim their guilt in some matter or other, then go forth daily and steal, lie and cheat proportionately to the amount of church going, so that they can be guilty and have a reason to go to church and to re-run “their” Tertiary. It always makes me laugh to hear Christians sing their “Onward Christian Soldier’s” tune or how two competing armies will pray to their perspective gods they have coloured, invented or perverted into wrathfully “no”/ “love” programmed beasts. All the major cultures have devised equally numbing systems, rituals, institutions and clothing practises in order to produce huge populations in order to win wars of attrition. They all perfect “love” to the point of hatred. The human animal, thus far, has indeed been a naked ape; an animal teetering on extinction before it could defend itself. When Lucifer, a band of scientists, altered your predecessors so that you would be hairless, it too was a mechanism to improve your procreative impetus. Marriage too was an important manipulation. Sex during pregnancy was just the mechanism to create obsessive intellectuals (expert dreamers).

If and when you once again learn to Sense, you will alter your societal technology. You will integrate purposely. Your societies will stabilise as you reformulate tribes without returning to reactionary forms of technology.

During the 1960’s and 1970’s many people attempted to change mankind’s way. They created communes. Unfortunately such institutions were created by “no” programmed beasts. Few of these attempts at Tribalism survive to this day. I visited many of these, but the Asleepness of members was far too ingrained in much of their memberships. A few people were able to learn, some we taught how to de-programme. Others we merely re-programmed. Rarely do we re-programme, but certain creatures had to be created. In this instance

with so many Pavlovian Perverts, it is easier to re-programme. Re-programming takes the intense manipulation of a single person, often by two teachers. It is far better that you yourselves acquire Will methodically as outlined in this book. It is possible to become Real, an Absorber, and to Ascend, while remaining among “no” programmed beasts, but it is very difficult. It is far easier to live and grow Real amongst others endeavouring to do the same.

The problem is simple. Castle-unConscious beasts are inSensitive. They feed your Asleepness and are mirror images of their and your own robes. These beasts eat the wrong things, which adds to the imperviousness of their suits of armour. Their air is polluted. They smell bad. And they incessantly conjure their Dream Keeps and remain prisoners therein. When someone offers Real love, they push these away. When helpful suggestions are made they “no” them.

These communes were “no”s to the cultures of the times. The term counter-culture or “no”-ing the present culture was born. It is very difficult changing a beast that “no”s incessantly. “no”-ing is what you do, not change, but “no”-ing. This does not remove encumbrances, but merely adds to the existing armour(y), which means you become more Asleep, more numb, more easily hypnotised and inSensitive. Your RW(M)AA readily are fed “love” in the company of “no” programmed animals. Before you can attempt to learn you must cleanse yourselves. ²⁰Dr. Arnold Ehret wrote books on this subject, which outlines the procedure for cleansing your body and remaining sensually clean. You need to exercise, do ten minute brush baths, ingest psyllium and a host of spices and herbs. The therapy also involves extremely warm showers and extremely cold showers alternately three time in succession to pump the toxins out of the pores. Once you become clean you must remain clean by eating a mucusless diet. This is a change of life-style that I am suggesting. An act of Will, initially. One will find it difficult to live amongst unReal people at first, later however, once you acquire sufficient Will, you shall want to go abroad to Absorb the free emotings of Homo robotics. Hopefully you will teach these beasts to become Real. The endeavour is to have you become Real and thus Sensitive, Conscious and Aware. SIX, Tribe or Coven is necessary to acquire knowledge of SEVEN, Spirituality. Until you are strong and Sensitive, it is best that you become part of a tribe and remain in Coven. You will probably enter Coven in order to procreate and to raise Homo sapiens initially and later rejoin the Castle-unConscious culture, but many will remain in coven, for coven is so Real and loving that you will feel the unlove amongst “lovers,” and decide that you don’t want to play their games of “no”-ing, don’t wish to be their surrogates, nor will you wish to “love” them in the perverted ways that they attempt to concerte from you.

By the formation of these tribal units, politicians will be swayed democratically. Laws such as enclosure laws will be formulated, which incite more compassionate and so much more stable living environments. Such a law would simply require that a person that owns property live on the most humble abode of his or her holdings and its most technically developed portion thereof, and all these personally owned lands must be interconnected. In this way a person will be unable to live in Florida and own slums in New York City. This enclosure act must also be designed and interpreted so as to induce a reduction in pollution by requiring the owner to live nearest the potential source of pollution. This law requires the person live in close proximity to the poorest community on that property in hopes that such an interaction and daily sight of their neighbours will induce them to reinforce their neighbour’s lives.

Bills involving criminology should be written so that each bill is designed with the teaching of Cause, Effect and Access in mind, while Understanding the Asleepness of criminals and their need for a growth of Will via Discipline and time spent in Reality. Instead of dreamily being allowed to reinforce their Asleepness by watching (bestial) TV and movies. They must be forced to Do. Prisons should be privately run and prisoners should work in society to pay back victims. The use of electronic collars could be used and in the event that they are removed by the prisoner will end the life of the prisoner that removes it. Simplicity is next to godliness.

Eventually Tribalism must grow to the point that bills are formulated by experts in their fields, statesmen who once were technocrats. Then these bills should be voted upon by those who elected these law proposer’s or bill makers. This would be a more pure form of democracy. The need for none political experts

²⁰Mucusless Diet Healing System , by Arnold Ehret, 1976, (0-87904-004-1), Lust.

has increased. It would help if Senators in America again were elected by members of the House of Representatives. With referendum deciding the fate of all bills. In Britain the House of Lords should be made up of the experts elected by members of the House of Commons out of the pool of Lords and Ladies of the Realm and elsewhere if needed.

Magic is the use of Cause, Effect and Access. You must use as a basis, this lesson. You are here to learn Magic/ how to Access and Absorb FORCE. Democracy, consumerism as well as your justice systems must be based upon the learning of Magic. You must not misprogramme your children with the Secondary Root of evil, nor the Primary and that for those of your number, that have been so misprogrammed, laws and institutions must be devised that will teach Access and develop Will.

Harassing by stopping drivers randomly to catch a few drunks is as bad as having sophisticated tax laws that infer with every business action that business people are slaves of the government. It should be enough that laws are designed so that people know that they will be held responsible for their actions: cause and effect. The privately owned prison will take out of his or her pay proceeds necessary to house, feed and cloth these students of magic, while the remainder of the proceeds of their work goes to meeting their responsibility for the survivors of the "incident," or the theft. Of course the survivors of murder may elect to kill the killer (which should be their choice and personal and physical responsibility), or the chronic thief who is unable to re-programme itself put to sleep painlessly, for it is too insane to get better, so that the beast can directly learn cause and effect. You people imagine that death is a stopping point in development but it is only part of the lessons. These bodies are a dime a dozen. Some people need the SHOCK of death in order to learn. Not until that first breath of birth does an holy fully take up residence in a grail. Also, untimely deaths such as train accidents, bullets- particularly when the person shot is filled with life via adrenaline, fear and aggression, or is killed while in a Dream State lacking Acceptance (unprepared and "no"-ing its transference) can result in a delay of six hundred years before that holy understands where it is and how to continue its lessons back on Eorthe plane (before they reincarnate)²¹. Someone that dies of slow and natural causes more easily Accepts the transference and can quickly reincarnate, generally within a few months (even a day or a second if there is a kin to enter, particularly a man (souless) kin rather than a human kin). As for crimes of theft, such students of magic (inmates) should not only work to return or replace all stolen or damaged defines involved in their criminal activity, but support survivors of those they killed or maimed, while they were perpetrating their criminal acts.

If a man is found guilty of beating his wife, then he should be beaten in the same manner by executioners attempting to recreate the wounds on his person, that he inflicted on his wife. Drug use should never be allowed as an excuse for misbehaviour, which is why all drugs must be legalised and then users would be held responsible for their actions once they chose to take or use the drug under their own volition. If (s)he ends up with a far more injured body after executioners are through, all the better ... The Law of Three: Cause, Effect and Access must be taught, must be learned.

It is easier for a 13 year old to get drugs than to get alcohol or cigarettes, presently. This is because tobacco and alcohol are legalised, recognised to exist and the distribution of these are controlled by adults. Illegal drugs are distributed by children, as was alcohol during Prohibition. That War on Drugs is a way for a few people to make a lot of money: policemen, politicians, churchmen, oh, yes, drug runners and drug dealers. That War is a sham for anyone knows that without the Singapore Solution it can never be won. The Singapore Solution is simple. You murder anyone that is caught with illegal drugs. In a Christian Society this is not a possibility. So legalisation is the only Real solution. And a judicial system willing to hold perpetrators responsible for their actions, whether or not they committed these acts under the influence of Twinkies, alcohol or heroine, or because they were born into the body that had to be beaten and molested by parents in order to learn its lessons on schoolhouse Eorthe Plane.

On the subject of abortion I wish to say that there again cause, effect and Access must be freely associated. There are those of you that eat animal flesh. The process of eating animal flesh and so much that

²¹ Life in the World Unseen, by Anthony Borgia, Published 1954, Odhams Press Limited

Homo robotics does, is because it is too insensitive to know better. No one should be allowed to eat flesh that has not had a hand in killing the animal that provided it. Killing animals to eat is no different than having an abortion, for it is killing an animal (no more and no less). Not until first breath does a Holy Grail exist, and there is no guarantee that the body won't remain Soul-less, entirely bestial. This is a choice, a decision. But the person that chooses to have the abortion should be required to hold and view the aborted foetus. This is the practising of Magic or Response-ability. The number of Human is Five: Freedom to choose, and six is Tribalism: Responsibility. These are necessary to Realise seven: Spirituality/ Absorption. Eight is Magic or Conscious use of the ability to respond, while nine, Raised Octave, is completeness for Ascension. Lucifer's group altered this planet and gave it this more simplistic structure. Cause and Effect for Access results from this structure: the LAW of THREE, while Completeness is described by the LAW of OCTAVES (but this is the long way around for the LAW of ONE, acquiring Will is all one Really needs- playing with the Eorthe Elements is just that: playing or practising Eorthe Magic or Gaming. There is a reason, always a reason. And this reason must be followed. In fact balance will exist here now no matter what you imagine or rationalise. Your RW(M)AA are expert bullshit artists, liars, etc. You people are so confused that you have a tremendous amount of words that have so many nuances. This too will slowly change once you become Real and Tribalistic. You will have less need for such dream reinforcement. Simplicity is next to Godliness.

On the subject of Cause, Effect and Access, you might decide that killers be killed in like fashion so that they can learn. Then again you might decide that they meet the responsibilities of their victim(s). Perhaps you will allow the victims of a crime decide punitive measures. You might decide that very confused and misprogrammed individuals be painlessly put to sleep by lethal injection and their body parts be sold to offset survivors' costs or perhaps the court costs. You might design a justice system that lets first offenders off completely while return offenders are painlessly put to sleep, whether their crime is murder, theft, assault, battery, rape or destruction of property. I once heard a person suggest that in the case of rape the offender should simply have the problem removed, another suggested a tattoo that everyone could see so that such a person be watched. Of course in a Tribal culture wherein sex is Accepted as recreation, and universal love and Acceptance is the Sense of its membership, rape or forced sex would not be, for sex would be performed as freely as eating. This alone would lower the birth rate, for the mechanism of Restraint and Excess would not exist when freely experiencing others. In honesty and Realness choices of birth control could be practised. Animals reacting to long periods of restraint and unRealness cause evil to reign: high emotion, aggression.

Choice. Whether society allows the individual to make choices, such as having an abortion or consuming a drug, should be decided by a vote, for its members make up that society. In either case, the law must be upheld. Punishments must be the Effect of breaking the law. The punishment for breaking a law should be included in the law. Punishments should not be left up to judges, rather they should be set forth in the law. Magic must be taught universally.

I personally would leave abortion up to the individual, as I would also allow the individual to decide how long it wishes to live or when and how it is going to die, when possible. I personally would legalise all drugs, but I would dispense them in forms and ways that could be taxed and controlled. I would also legalise gambling and prostitution, but I would designate places that offer these services so that they could be controlled and regulated. In my view, a thief must be held responsible for every penny, any vandalism, or psychological problem he or she caused to emerge in the victims of the crime. If the thief is a good one and has sufficient funds to pay the piper, then he or she need not spend any time in jail. Of course repeat offenders would be put to sleep after the third conviction and after they had met their responsibilities, for it would then be plain that they are too imprisoned in a poorly designed Dream Keep to awaken. Punishment for any trespass must be the same no matter who is found guilty. To know that Cause, Effect and Access is Really going to be the case in every instance will induce most criminals to wilfully change their ways. They would more readily free-associate a need to change, then self institute the necessary change. The thief steals because he is too lazy to work in order to acquire wealth or is re-running a "no" programme, so punitive systems must put the thief to work and laws must require them to pay back what they steal and hold them responsible. What could be simpler? Does this mean I am a genius or does it mean laws have been made and executed by Asleep, word weaving Dreamers?

There are of course those who steal in order to feed their family. This is why there are social programmes. The need for these could be greatly reduced by the creation of a national, and even an international job pool, that would find work for people and transport these workers around the state, nation and eventually the planet. Of course Coven or a society made up of Tribes tangented to be represented in a nation, right up to the planetary government level, would have little need for social programmes maintained to make hermits and outcasts out of certain members of society. Instead these people would be members of tribes.

The present systems of justice throughout the world are straying from the lesson of Cause, Effect and Access. Those cultures that are the wealthiest are the most unReal, for as I have repeated and repeated: their members have been afforded the resources, idle time and space to perfect their Asleepness/ confusion. All laws must be based upon, in order to teach magic: Cause, Effect and Access. Otherwise members of these societies will fall deeper and deeper Asleep and chaos will reign. The Lemming Process will worsen. A new Dark Age will develop (or rather has developed). This is why technical-tangented-Tribalism must be Realised. An environment for the development of Absorbers must be maintained.

Many of the crimes will disappear as the population stops misprogramming their children. For example, as nudity is practised universally whenever (climatic) Realities dictate, and sex becomes a recreation and free-associated rather than a mindless action of a sexually restrained beast trying to return to “Womb” by “no”-ing. Such things as rape will no longer exist. Since most criminals are merely motivated by doing a “no” to get attention, serial killers, kleptomaniacs, liars: “no”-ers of all forms will disappear, and with laws equitably enforced those few that do become misprogrammed will be hopefully de-programmed or exterminated so that they cannot have a chance to misprogramme others.

Many of the ideas I have offered may seem unReal to a hopelessly “no” programmed Pavlovian Pervert. Your values and perception of Reality isn't, which is to say that Reality is not in your ken. Misery will continue to be your finest and most ‘artistic’ creation. Asleepness will continue to be your state of nothingness, your entombment will continue and deepen. Chaos will be your god; bestiality will rein supreme.

One of my favourite books is In Watermelon Sugar written by Richard Brautigan. The book's setting is in such a foreseen future: the American Utopia. In this future a fellow of the name of imBoil reads about your present world and tries to reconstruct it. ImBoil rediscovers how to make alcohol and induces a few followers to ingest toxic amounts of the substance and then they decide to maim themselves, which is something you do today as your RW(M)AA re-runs the Secondary Root of evil. It is hilarious. ImBoil tries so very hard to recreate your ludicrous present unReality from publications he finds. But the population at large in Watermelon Sugar can't fathom the actions of imBoil because these people are Real/ loving, but they do not judge or stop imBoil, for they readily Accept.

Beware of serious men for they are seriously insane.

You must practise laughter as the first stage of return to Reality and in order to rediscover the ability of your youth, the ability to Absorb, which is what you call Sensuality. Richard Brautigan and Kurt Vonnegut are good instructors in Acceptance.

You may notice that I am only advising, for this is your planet.

Getting Started

You could begin by forming a study group. Start Jousting and practising magic (doing your job, occupation, or filling your wakefulness with doing), dispersed with a return to Jousting any time you or anyone in your group suggests it (notices you or anyone is out of It/ Reality). You may as well start hugging and caressing one another right away, for you creatures are so far out and removed from Reality by your concealment that balance must be re-established in this way. Once you become proficient in Accessing Reality you may go on to such things as Tribalism.

In America, the cheapest way to actually start a commune or coven is to begin yet another religious cult. A good one, if the majority of your group were raised as Baptists, would be a cult that used as basic law and rhetoric the Baptist's dogma, for most of it is good and correct; being merely a variation on the teachings of the Skywalker you call Christ. By being a religion you beat the tax thing. All your members can be ordained priestesses and priests. All religions have basic truths. It hardly matters which one you choose. Familiarity and what is comfortable for the entire group is all that matters.

I usually suggest a better way. This is the formation of a corporation. Presently the planet is under the blind control of animals that are fanatical money makers. These are the fanatics that could not understand such concepts as family unit (within a Castle-unConscious Culture), the importance of having a mother or father at home raising and directing offspring. These obsessive creatures see nothing wrong with an increase in Dreaming, an increase in unConscious "no" driven actions, an increase in crime to the point of mobocracy. Why should these money makers care about the masses and the future of humankind? They have money, their lives are short, they can insulate themselves from the rabble via their wealth, or so they think. Their children may find the rabble and become part of it as the "love" programme called controversy. Drugs, violence, negligence and abuse gets closer and closer to their doors, yet it all makes perfect sense for these beasts, who are inSensitive, numb. "no"s of any kind seem normal to them, and being Homo robotics they are very un-loving and uncaring, but being addicted to *Response* for next happens emoting, they "love" to emote over "no"s of any sort or kind. They readily would "love" having their offspring mutilated, murdered or harmed in some way, so that "they" can emote. Hatred is merely a form of "love," after all. (I did call this Soapbox, didn't I?) These decide the laws, buying the politicians, manipulating the tax laws to protect their corporations, their wealth. (Wow, great to have the rich as scapegoats to "no" isn't it?)

Another way to form a tribe is by forming a corporation, which would be a contract of marriage of the group and it computes as an accepted way of doing things (in the unConsciousness state of the ruling members of the present culture on planet Earth). It would be nice if the group has practised a bit of what I have 'preached' in this book, but in no way is it necessary before going corporate. I want you to understand and be forewarned of a potential problem. Castle-unConscious people imagine "mom's" and "daddies," they are ruled by R(W)MAA who pretend jealousy, re-run the "love" programme known as hatred, and generally "no" everything: looking and finding "love" in all the wrong places. There is no such thing as incompatibility (PERIOD). I have often heard individuals suggest that there are some people that are just not compatible with others. If you find this to be true in any case, it is most instructive to live and interact with the person or persons in whose company you feel disharmony, for this is why you have met. If you can learn to love/ Accept such a person you will have acquired better Access to the FORCE, for you will be more balanced and aware. In the event that two or more members disagree or Sense any sort of dissension, I suggest that you take off their clothing and touch one another with the entire coven either participating or at least as witness, anytime differences emerge. Then once everyone is Sensitive and Real again, hold a vote. If the difference is in regard to a corporate decision, accept the majority's decision. In the event that the decision proves incorrect, accept this and make corrections, for emoting is useless and besides it is wasteful. The difference of opinion or feeling of discord may be personal even intimate. Intimacy between only two or three people must be shared with everyone, for otherwise it is exclusionary, selfish and probably Freudian, robotic (merely another "no" programme that one or the other is attempting to re-run). After the entire group has heard the nonsense and the

non-Sense has been stopped by Corporate Council (nudity and touching), equilibrium will then be re-established. I am serious, but don't you be. Accept. Love.

By forming a corporation all earnings can be re-invested into the corporation. This means that no taxes need ever be paid or rarely (unless the tax systems are improved and simplified- hilariously everyone that is in business in the United States is reminded hourly that they work for Big Brother, for they must incessantly keep records- with each and every acquisition of fuel, food, equipment reminds them that they are subjects of the Overlord- all day long they collect receipts- They keep paying those ol' (futile) Feudal Dues. Hilariously the US Constitution's sole reason for being written or devised was to end feudalism, but it is back and in full force in America despite the good intentions of the Founding Fathers). Incessantly reminded of the Over Lord. Big Brother is watching you. You are "loved."

(I suggest you get a national sales tax on everything and get rid of the paper work)

A little side track here. Education should be supplied locally, by the consent, democratically, of the members of the tribe, county, parish, state, etc. Federal government, the entity governed and created by the US Constitution does not include education, welfare. There is a simple reason for this. Once a government starts educating or dispensing welfare, this same government enters the sanctity of the Tribe or home. Religious freedoms no longer exist. Government comes into the home and starts telling the individual how they will be allowed to raise their children. The welfare state begins to buy votes. And the Bill of Rights says nothing about a right to an education supplied by politicians or rather gangsters.

Within a corporation classrooms can be built, infirmaries, work areas of the most advanced technical type. Once all the necessary capital investments are made, members can go on 365 day a year vacations paid by the corporation if the corporation can generate sufficient income, or go on business trips that take that long. Every housing unit can be as plush as the Taj Mahal. You can re-invest in solar energy of every kind: wind, photo-voltaic, water pumps, refrigerators, air-conditioners (yes there are such things already in the market place). You can buy boats, have swimming pools, computers, all sorts of toys.

I would choose nine females and seven males as the smallest number of members to start a coven for that presently is the population distribution of males compared to females in the county in which I am presently doing this writing. The membership of the tribal unit can be any size, as long as it has a personal number of members. As you raise Real/ Sensitive offspring, the tribal numbers can grow quite large. Beings will exist who no longer have to constantly re-establish their Realness and Honesty by forced nudity, revealing or compulsory unconcealment, and excessive touch-love in order to become and remain empathic and sympathetic.

These Homo sapiens will be far more Conscious. Their Sensuality will incline them to work as Coven, one Conscious body of people. You now call this universal quality psychic ability. This is a common or generic term that you use for the entire range of enhanced Senses of a Real being. I suggest that the proportion of males to females reflect the statistical Realities of the municipality in which you locate, for this is the responsible thing to do.

The ramifications of living tribally are many. Such living is a statement. I suggest that you start out in municipalities that allow children to be taught at home. You must be (and appear in public) the most conservative, Real and Honest group in that municipality. This is your game to remain in present Time. Your lifestyle will sway others to live in like manner. Politicians will become your representatives as the number of Tribes grow. Grass roots is the most stable way to bring about change. Covens are very stable because each corporation is an autonomous society within the host municipality. This means that the tribe not only raises its own basic necessities for good nutrition, as well as supplying its own educational, health and law enforcement facilities, while producing tradable and exportable products, but above all it becomes a definitive voting block.

I suggest the nudity thing not be publicised for the time being though, which is why I suggested a Corporate Council rather than a religious one. At least don't flaunt nudity. If it is hot outside individuals may decide to go nude, but it would be wise not to do so in the mixed company of non-covenanters. You can readily see why Coven must be autonomous, for the Castle-unConscious culture is so removed from honesty and Acceptance, let alone the form of honesty found in nudity. "no"-ing is an addiction with Castle-unConscious creatures. They will crucify you or harm you anytime they can feed their addiction.

Ninety-nine percent of everything learned can be free-associated. Only about one percent is a matter of pure thought or reasoning in any culture. Because this is a Reality I have chosen to write this book in a way that repeats and repeats and repeats a very few concepts. Saying a thing once is not enough no matter how right or SHOCKing it may be when trying to communicate to a Pavlovian Pervert.

By using solar and renewable sources of energy you will become self-sufficient. This is the value of technological knowledge. But what is far more important is that in the event of catastrophes caused by your planet's periodicity, your corporation will be more likely to survive. Tribal living is ecological. For instance only one well need be drilled for a large number of people. Fewer vehicles need be maintained for the group than for the same number of individuals living in a Castle-unConscious society. The greater the state of communal sharing the greater the reductions in energy usage. Common showers, common kitchens, common cold storage, common sleeping quarters, the more communal you become the less pollution need be produced, both in the production of the capital good, property, as well as in the day to day use or its maintenance. Back to the Soapbox ...

"no" programmed dreamers prefer to pay nay-sayer's (greenpeacer's) to harass businesses and lobby governments rather than personally doing anything about the problem of pollution themselves. Don't depend upon some government ruling mandating policies that force the masses or some business to become energy efficient. Five is the number of freedom. Governments need to be free, citizens must be able to freely make mistakes, for that is how one learns Six, Response ability. You must understand who and what government officials are. For the most part government officials are Templars. Unfortunately petty tyrants (most government bureaucrats) were the nerds of your childhood and are not motivated by anything more than getting even or demanding self respect vengefully from people. They are much like witches as compared to Ladies (priestesses). A Lady is concerned with teaching a person how to become sufficiently wilful so that she or he is able to Access FORCE and Do (on its own). A witch on the other hand wants to lead and manipulate people to do her bidding. I find nothing immoral about making a beast happy by leading it to do the Natural thing, to re-run programmes for surrogate bairn attendants. But if you want to change anything you must do so yourself. People and children learn by example rather than by science or rationale. If you want to stop pollution, you must erect a cloths line and use it to dry your clothing no matter how rich you are. You must invest in energy saving devices such as insulation, Window Quilts, Fridge-Mates and solar systems, not in the words and antics of fanatics (greenpeace, whom you pay to re-run yet another "no"/ "love"/ "Womb" programme, that as usual ends in the exudation of evil, as do all such programmes). Words are cheap. You can't idly sit around hoping government officials (many of whom are carnie's or nerds with chips on their shoulder, and too stupid to get Real jobs) will dictate new policies that will be of value to someone other than a special interest group or that just "no"s some group or someone. At this point in time it is crucial to begin to democratise via grass-roots Tribalism, for blatantly there are very few statesmen (both female statesmen and male statesmen). The beasts have become comatose in their Dreamily Dark Tower of petty hatreds and incessant "no"-ing. These politicians waste more time "no"-ing one another than doing anything Real and valuable. The growth of Technical-Tangented-Tribalism will become an effective and democratic way to steer government policy as the number of these Tribes or corporations grow. Petty tyrants are counter productive and need to be reviewed and eliminated, particularly appointed ones that are doing a poor job or no job at all.

Arbitrators made up of retired business people should be enlisted to visit bureau's and government agencies outside of the districts in which they live and review their operations and have the power to fire or pension early, members that are extraneous. Also, all those citizens that have dealt with an agency over a five year period should be polled. If a member of the agency was disliked, for whatever reason- corruption, incivility, had suggested they'd take a bribe (or refused a bribe), and was disliked by 76percent of those whom were polled, then they, by law would have to resign from government for a period of five years.

The maintenance of your home planet, as is everything, is up to you.

Only you can prevent forest fires.
And remember no one gives a hoot about you but you.

Tribe is an indulgence that when manifested amongst Castle-unConscious People,
Makes life very easy, while keeping its members more Real.

You must schedule your life around the sun. Fore instance, when you need to wash cloths you must try and do it on days when the clothes line will be effective. You must go to the trouble to religiously save energy, not because it is expensive (which it is!), but because it is polluting to do otherwise. You must share rides, walk, ride a bicycle or hitch-hike, not for the sake of learning the Six of love for family, friends and community, but more for the love of your home planet. This must become the fashion, the thing that 'in' people do. People who are Real, Sensual could never harm their foetus. A Real person could not harm his or her planet. This could be called respecting nature, or sun worshipping. You are never too busy or too rich to respect your planet. Just as you must never be too something-or-other to care for your offspring. Six is the number of responsibility. You must Real-ise responsibility in order to Real-ise spirituality, the number Seven, which is Acceptance and quiet Absorption.

Now you understand why I called this book utter nonsense. Can you imagine a group of people going naked during town meetings? Can you imagine people being Real and Honest with one another? Can you imagine entire tribes of people loving one another and including every member in their love? Can you imagine people caring about the environment and actually doing something about it?

Get Real.

(touch one another)

The Many Choices

There are many variations to the theme, Coven. The married tribe may decide to share a single sleeping room and communal shower. Or they may decide to have separate houses one mile apart. I would suggest that the more things you share, the more the membership will remain in present time, but what should actually be the basis of a tribe and reason for its creation is its technology or magical repercussions. Does the technology of living within a tribe Access greater energy, while expending less to do so? This can simply be put: is it worth your while, will it make life easier?

Realise that systems and requirement do not ensure that more people will Ascend. The American Indian tabooed the wheel. This and other ritualised refusals on the use of technologies, it was decided Wilfully, would ensure that the membership would be required to pay sufficient attention to Reality in order to survive. This group did have a much higher rate of Ascension than the huge population that now lives on the same lands. Less technology would not guarantee that the people remain Awake and Aware, but it has proven to be the case among some people. However, no matter how difficult or easy technology becomes, still members can and will fall Asleep. It is true that the harsher a Reality the greater percentage of Real occupants will exist, for dreamers tend to die off, for they find it difficult to Sense and Realise what is necessary to survive. People who are marginally Asleep tend to become more Real in situations that require that they pay attention. I suggest however that Covens or Tribes remain at the height of technical knowledge and usage. Technology should grow. Ease of life due to a mature level of co-operation and applicable usage of technology will entice others to follow suit. Making commitment to such an endeavour will make life easier, no matter the amount of communalism practised. The present Honey-mooner mentality, being the “king of ones castle,” is so unReal that any form of sharing makes life that much easier, safer, healthier, and above all, has that much greater impact upon the well-being of the planet. Tribes do not tend to create pollution that they must live near or that their children will have to deal with later.

You might be interested to know that the peoples of the Americas were confronted by a greater (white) technology. These were not Spiritual beings, but the Indians knew that their arrival was important and necessary. The actions of mass slaughter was a SHOCK for mass-Ascension. The problem with attachment to this plane are those you left behind, but in the Spanish lust for “no”-ing they exterminated entire tribes, so there were no members whom these souls (once earthly grails) could long for, for they were all freed at the same time.

Within coven many of today’s evils cannot exist. Jealousy becomes an unknown concept, for everyone randomly shows affection towards everyone else. Adultery is not a relevant concept. Rape is not a word in a covener’s dictionary, for sex is in fact enjoyable and open. Without the trappings of Freudian marriage mentalities, sex is no big thing, copulation is an honest and open affair. Physical abuse is an unknown for without the Primary Root there exists no reason to re-programme individuals. Within Coven no one has any understanding of forced sex. Without the Primary and Secondary Roots of evil, basis of crime is eliminated.

There are a lot of adjustments to the present Castle-unConscious cultures that would help improve the running of them: making them more fair, more energy efficient, less polluting, more egalitarian. But other than having systems set-up and maintained by computers and robo-cops and robo judges (that would be blind to ones race, economic status, religion, etc.), mankind in its present form can never create the Ascenders that GOD requires. In this planetary situation there exists a built in mechanism. This lemming-process in human contributes to the production of evil acts and destructive forces. Balance always exists in God’s creations. The Castle-unConscious Cultures fulfilled their functions, producing animals capable of creating machines of survival. Now it is time to arrest will from the robotic and bestial systems and raise an Octave, becoming Conscious beings, able and willing to control your own destiny. The baboon lives in what you call troops. Human must remain Tribal if it is going to Ascend and if your planet is to survive in its present state. Tribalism is the stepping stone to Wilfulness, Sensuality and Empathy.

The Truth

Originally your kind was used by a mining company to prepare planets for gutting. The way it worked was your kind was let loose on a planet such as Mars and soon enough you would destroy its atmosphere making gutting the planet much easier for the mining machinery to operate. Light Giver is a reference to producing energy for its customers. Eventually Lucifer took on the role of mining resources of all sorts. Those of you left on a planet died in the process. You were manipulated at certain times, by a pre-requisite methodology. It is mechanics, nothing less. The empire that allowed this has since been replaced by a number of confederacies. Because Earth has a Council (deceased Conscious Holies), it has been decided that Lucifer must afford you a fix, and insight as to our methods. It is difficult to alter your Lemming-Process. This is why I had to borrow a dying human's body, for there is no other way to figure what goes on with your kind. This method of using such a body was rarely used. The mining company's Templars used this method as part of their scheme to affect the necessary changes for you to carry out this planetary preparation process. You were used on many 48 Transectional class planets. If a planet was not of that class, and could be upgraded, it was. Earth was not originally a 48 Transectional, whereas Mars was. Up until just lately your water was as valuable as the core of your planet. This was the Reality of this particular trade route and the previous limitations of transport. No need to go any further in mundane facts. I just want you to understand that the use of your kind has been long practised, and knowledge of how you were used to carry out the designs of the miners is so very old and well formulated that no one Really understands and up until now no one cared the methods used sufficiently to reverse this lemming-process.

It would seem that a return to Reality, balance and honesty is the first step. It is plain to see that the mechanism of clothing the body and the dishonesty perpetrated by this practise is a major stumbling block, for sex and having sex (copulating incessantly) is plainly an obsession universally preoccupying your kind. This alone is a good starting point. Stopping intellectualism or talking to ones "self" seems to be another major stumbling block. Segregation of age groups and a hermit life-style, too, seems to be a universal mistake on your planet (well not if we wanted you to eventually destroy the planet's atmosphere). Refraining from physical touching is also a bad thing among your kind. Talking too much is also Dream inducing. Living outside of a tribe or a group of persons of a size whereby everyone cannot know intimately all its members, is a mistake. It also seems to be a mistake to specialise and segregate the systems of any society. The economic, social, and political systems must be tribal, personal, intimate and somewhat autonomous. From this small and personal unit can develop economic as well as political infrastructure. A common language, one that is glyphic, rather than phonetic may be desirable so that (educational) knowledge and legal agreements would less likely fall prey to confusion and colloquial corruption and a furtherance of sophistication.

You can effect all these accoutrements of the ²²In Watermelon Sugar utopia, but without a growth of Will, none of this will be sustained, for the "no" programmed mentality must be wiped out first. Consciousness must become the vogue rather than that which is presently in vogue. The present vogue, in case you are too numb to Realise it, is the same vogue to which many previous cultures on Earth (and on other 48 Transectional planets) succumbed. To be "no" is in vogue. To do "no" is in vogue. To be incapable is in vogue. To be confused is in vogue. To be disorganised is in vogue. To wear your hair in the style of a bag lady is in vogue. To wear ill-fitting clothing is in vogue. To appear to be dis-functional is in vogue. To appear to be a mechanical defect or wear clothing that was mis-manufactured is in vogue. Mediocrity is in vogue. Being irritating and abusive is in vogue. Being emotional is in vogue.

As this Asleepness grows, so too does the size of the stick needed to SHOCK the subsequent Sleep walkers to Awareness. To such Asleep animals eventually crime seems, to an ever growing percentage of the population, to be "loving," desirable and necessary, even reasonable. And the art, drama, entertainment and music is a celebration of what is in vogue (insanity). After all, if crawling to the "no" elicited touch-love then doing the variations on this theme also must be a useful technology to elicit attention.

²²In Watermelon Sugar by Richard Brautigan, Published 1973, Dell

This planet, because it once was of chaos configuration, may readily return to that state.

I must say that your kind are the most ridiculous beings I have ever studied. You now know the facts, yet in a span of twenty years you will have, more than likely, sophisticated and perverted the intent of this writing to the point that it will be again part of a “no” religion, for look at what you have done to so many esoteric beliefs. Both the religions of Islam and Christianity (both further sophistication’s of Judaism) have been perverted. Both now are vehicles of evil. Both have been perverted and distorted out of a “need” for “love.”

After you re-discover universal Consciousness via Coven (perhaps I am being too optimistic), you will no longer need to remain in small tribal units of personal numbers. The growth of Consciousness means a great deal, far more than you can understand presently.

One other suggestion. It would be wise for the planet to open all borders and even go so far as to practise resettlement of different ethnic and racial peoples among different populations, so as to ensure assimilation of their unique spiritual keys. But, only after the problem of a lack of population control and response ability is addressed.

One final word. Don’t believe anything you have read here. It is all utter nonsense. Everything and everybody mentioned in this book is made up, entirely fictitious. Neither you nor I exist. I’d say goodbye but then I don’t exist to have said anything. And actually I never said hello.

Bibliographies

Mucusless Diet Healing System , by Arnold Ehret, 1976, (0-87904-004-1), Lust.

Revenge of the Lawn, by Richard Brautigan, 1973, (0-440-34026-8), Dell.

Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas, by Hunter S. Thompson, 1989, (0-679-72419-2), Vintage.

That Hideous Strength, by C. S. Lewis, 1990 Repr. of 1946 ed. text, (0-02-571255-1), Macmillan.

Out of the Silent Planet, by C. S. Lewis, 1990 Repr. text ed., (0-02-570795-7), Macmillan.

In Watermelon Sugar, by Richard Brautigan, 1973, (0-440-34026-8), Dell.

Dyanetics, by L. Ron Hubbard

Life in the World Unseen, by Anthony Borgia, Published 1954, Odhams Press Limited

The characters and incidents portrayed and the names herein are fictitious. Any similarities to the name, characterisation of any person is entirely coincidental and unintentional.

—

—